

## 301 Sibling's talk..

“Are you not able to sleep?”

Recognizing the voice, Jiang Yang spoke without turning to look at the person, “Nope! But why are you still awake, Yuyan?”

Jiang Yuyan stepped in her brother's direction with the water bottle in her hand, “I woke up to drink water and through the window, I happened to notice you.” Having few sips of water from the bottle she offered it to him, “Want some?”

“Thank you” saying it, he accepted the bottle and drank some of the water.

Once he was done, Jiang Yuyan stood up next to him and asked while looking at the starry sky, just as him, “So, what happened to keep my brother awake at this hour of the night?”

Jiang Yang inhaled deeply, “Nothing much. Just felt like to have fresh air,” He replied.

“Since when, you started to lie to me, brother?”

Jiang Yang smiled to hear it and said, “You are getting smarter now, little sis.”

“I was always smart. Now tell me the truth,” She asked not minding to his diverting remark.

Jiang Yang moved his sight across the sky as he was in deep thought, “I kissed her today.”

Hearing it, Jiang Yuyan looked at her brother, “Nixxie?” It was obvious for her to know, whom he was talking about.

“Hmm!” He nodded.

“Then?” She was still looking at her brother who turned his head to look at her and answered her curiousness, “Nothing. Just kissed.”

“Does she like you too?” Jiang Yuyan asked looking in his eyes.

He nodded, "I guess, yes!"

"That's nice to hear." Both looked at the sky with smiles on their faces.

In a while, Jiang Yuyan asked again, "How was it?"

"What? A kiss?" He asked.

"Hmm!" she nodded.

Jiang Yang remembered the kiss and replied, "It was different from the kisses those I had with other girls."

"Different?" She couldn't understand it. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

"With other girls, it was more like a need of a body but with her, it was not like that. Instead, It was a need of my heart." He replied.

Giving out a deep sigh, Jiang Yuyan said, "Finally, my brother is in true love."

"I think so too and I never imagined it feels like this." He had a pleasant smile on his face.

"I can feel you, brother."

Both stood there talking for a while, enjoying a cool breeze and went back to their rooms to sleep.

The next day was a Saturday and it was off day for Jiang Yang and the day when Jiang Peizhi and Jiang Ruolan were leaving China. He wanted to go to the hospital just to see Nixxie, once but as his parents were going back, he decided to spend time with them.

That day, Nixxie was waiting for him to visit her mother but again, another doctor came for the follow up of her mother. Before she could ask anything, the doctor spoke, "Today is Saturday and the doctor Jiang Yang's off day so I am here to take care of the things."

Nixxie nodded as she realized, she forgot, it was his off day. Having unhappy expressions on her face, she sat on the couch and let the doctor do his work. In her heart, she was hoping to

see Jiang Yang as she was used to seeing him and there was a silent conversation between them through their sights, though there were no words. It was like both were happy by just seeing each other.

Slowly her mother was getting better and she started to talk too. Once the doctor left the room, her mother looked at her and noticed her daughter was sad. In her weak voice she called her daughter, "Nicky!"

Nixxie heard her mother and went to her, "Are you feeling alright mother?"

"Hmm!" she nodded and signaled Nixxie to sit beside her.

Sitting on the edge of the bed of her mother, she asked, "What happened mother?"

"What happened to you? You look upset," Her mother asked staring straight in her eyes, seeking the answer in her daughter's eyes instead of in her words.

"I am fine, mother. I was just feeling a bit low, nothing much," Nixxie replied to assure her mother.

Her mother didn't stress the thing much but she knew her daughter well and understood, something was not right with her. For some time she decided to just stay quiet and look out for her precious daughter.

"Those people. Have they visited here?" her mother asked to which Nixxie nodded.

"What did they say?"

"Nothing much but I said that I will take care of you and they don't have to bother themselves with you," Nixxie replied.

"You did well." Saying it, her mother closed her eyes as she was still weak and needed a rest. Nixxie let her mother rest and went back to her place. Sitting there she couldn't help but miss the person whom she was waiting for.

At Jing residence...

Lu Qiang, Lu Feng went to Jiang's residence as Jiang Yang's parents were leaving soon and these two were invited for

lunch.

It was a chance for Lu Qiang and Lu Feng to get an update on Jiang Yang as there was nothing special they got to know about him through San Zemin other than the fact that Jiang Yang operated on Nixxie's mother and as a doctor, he was doing his work. There was nothing more San Zemin could tell them.

Lu Qiang and Lu Feng reached Jiang residence. Jiang Yuyan was happy to see Lu Qiang there as much as he was to see her.

When all were sitting on the sofa, Jiang Yang said to see the happiness on his sister's face, "Control your happiness Yuyan, we know you are very happy to see him here."

Moving a bit closer to Lu Qiang, she replied, "Is it wrong to be happy to see him?" Lu Qiang circled his hands around her shoulder.

"When did I say it's wrong? See how much I am happy to see my darling here." Saying it he winked at Lu Feng.

"Don't call me your darling, when you are planning to betray me," said Lu Feng

## 302 I Kissed Her...

“Don’t call me your darling, as you are planning to betray me,” said Lu Feng.

Jiang Yang was sitting beside Lu Feng. Hearing it, he shifted closer to Lu Feng just as Jiang Yuyan did with Lu Qiang, “Ohh! Darling seems jealous.”

Shifting away from him, Lu Feng frowned, “Jealous? My A\*\*!”

Seeing him annoyed, all three laughed. “You are talking like Yuyan now. You know it’s her favorite line to say.”

Hearing it, Jiang Yuyan exclaimed, “Brother!”

Lu Qiang was surprised to hear it, “Really? I never heard her saying it”

“Hmm! It’s only when I annoy her to death. Do you want to see the demo?” saying it he looked at his sister who was upset with him.

“Stop it, brother! You ....”

Just then Mo Ruolan came to the Living room and asked them to come to the dining room as lunch was ready. Jiang Peizhi was not present there as he went to see his dear friend Lu Jinhai.

After lunch, again three friends excused themselves to go upstairs in Jiang Yang’s room to which Jiang Yuyan gave them a displeased glare.

Noticing her unhappy expressions, Jiang Yang said, “Sister we are going to do some men’s talk that you might find embarrassing. Do you want to come with us?”

Jiang Yuyan knew her brother was making up the stuff and they were going to talk about something that they didn’t want her to know. “I am fine. Go ahead. I will be with mom.”

When they entered the bedroom, Lu Qiang and Lu Feng stepped towards the couch to sit but Jiang Yang stopped them, “Not here, let’s go outside in the balcony. Today the weather is too good.” Jiang Yang said with a pleasant smile on his face.

“There is nothing special. It’s the same as usual.” Lu Feng said, noticing the reason behind his smile and stepped towards the balcony along with Lu Qiang.

As they reached out, Jiang Yang spoke again, “For me, it’s something new.” Saying it he moved to the railing of the balcony.

Lu Qiang looked at Lu Feng but didn’t know from where to start the conversation with Jiang Yang and went towards the railing too. Both were standing on Jiang Yang’s either side looking at the view in front. The wind was blowing calmly and everything seems too peaceful.

“Shoot guys.” Jiang Yang said suddenly that made both of his friends to look at him in a surprise.

Jiang Yang spoke again, “I know what you guys are here for and what you want to know.” Jiang Yang was one smartest person to grasp the things. Moreover, he knew his friends better, that when, why and what they wanted to do,

Looking at him, Lu Qiang straight came to the point, “If you know it already then say it.”

“Hmm! I tried to not think about her but I can’t do it.” Jiang Yang replied.

Hearing it, Lu Feng was unhappy as he was worried about Jiang Yang, “As we know, if we say not do something, you would want to do it even more.” “Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

“It’s not that Lu Feng. I liked her since the first day I saw her. Since that day she is in my mind and I can’t get her out of it.” Jiang Yang tried to clear his side.

“We are asking you to back down because we care for you and we don’t want you to be in any kind of trouble.” Lu Qiang

understood him as he too was in love but this time it was a matter of his friend's safety.

Jiang Yang turned around and stood while resting his back on the railing. He looked at both of his friends, "Is it because of her family?"

"Hmm!" Both nodded.

"Yeah! They seem weird people and she looked scared when two men from her family came to visit her mother."

"You met them?" Lu Qiang asked.

Jiang Yang nodded, "Hmm! One was her father and another was her brother but I wonder why she reacted that way with her own father and brother, specifically her brother."

"Stepbrother!" Lu Feng exclaimed as he was not happy to remember that man.

"Ohh! So she has a problem with her stepbrother?"

"It's a long story, Jiang Yang. Just listen to our advice and stay away from that family," Lu replied.

"I have no interest in her family but with her, I can't take my step back that I took forward once last night." Jiang Yang was determined by his decision.

"Huh? What do you mean?" Both looked at him, thinking about what he might have done.

"I kissed her and I don't want to be one of those jerks who took advantage of a girl and then left her. Also, I can see, she likes me. As I started it, I can't disappoint her now."

"It's not a big deal Jiang Yang. I am sure she herself would want you to stay away from her and her family," Lu Feng tried to convince him again.

"She might be but I don't want to leave her alone now. The way she reacted last night I know she likes me too. Moreover, whenever I see her I feel like to protect her. She is one scared and lost the person who pretends to be strong on the outside but in reality, she needs someone who can protect and take care of her." Jiang Yang said.

“We know, but you can’t do anything for her, instead of just creating one more weakness for her.” Lu Feng was focused on trying to divert Jiang Yang while Lu Qiang was thinking about something.

“Why is it like this? Will you guys care to explain it to me? I want to know everything now,” said Jiang Yang.

“No need Jiang Yuyan. Just stay away from all these things.” Lu Feng denied.

Lu Qiang and Lu Feng were aware that if they told him everything, he will feel even more sympathetic towards her and they won’t be able to stop him from going to her. They preferred to stay silent.



## 303 Jiang Yang, Getting To Know The Past..

Lu Qiang and Lu Feng were aware that if they told him everything, he will feel even more sympathetic towards her and they won't be able to stop him from going back to her. They preferred to stay silent.

Seeing them not willing to tell him anything, he frowned, "Okay! I will get to know it on my own. Whether you guys tell me about her or not, I am not going to take a step back that I already took forward."

"Jiang Yang! You idiot." Lu Feng exclaimed.

"No more words guys." Saying it, Jiang Yang turned around and continued staring far away towards the hills.

Lu Feng was annoyed as Jiang Yang was being stubborn but before he could say anything further, Lu Qiang spoke, "Are you really serious about her?"

"Yes! I am!" Jiang Yang replied.

"No way Lu Qiang. We already lost one friend now we can't let another one go in the same dangerous way." Lu Feng was not happy with what Lu Qiang was going to do.

Hearing it, Jiang Yang looked at both of them with surprised expressions, "What is it, guys? Will you please tell me?"

"Lu Feng, don't panic. It's not like we can't deal with Xi Cheng but we just wanted to maintain distance with him as he can do anything without thinking twice and we have our families and friends to protect." Lu Qiang tried to calm Lu Feng.

"I know Xi Cheng well, that's why I am worried about this idiot." Lu Feng was angry.

"Calm down, Lu Feng. Let me handle it and also this time we should do something for his sister for the sake of our

friendship with him.”

“I wanted to help her after Xi Guo’s death but that thing could bring disaster to our peaceful lives so I stopped myself. If I could, I would have killed that bastard. He took away Xi Guo from us.” Saying it Lu Feng felt emotional and his eyes turned moist.

Lu Qiang stepped ahead and hugged him, “I know Lu Feng and this time we should do what we couldn’t at that time. Now we have power while back then we were powerless and stuffed with the responsibilities of our family.”

Jiang Yang was shocked to see Lu Feng like this as to think what might have happened that he was emotional and moreover, to console him Lu Qiang literally hugged him, “I want to know everything now and I won’t listen to you guys until I get to know everything.”

Lu Qiang nodded and once Lu Feng was calm, they went to sit on the chair around the coffee table in the balcony. Once all were comfortable Lu Qiang started to narrate the things from the past.

“Xi family’s head and Nixxie’s father, Xi Guiren married to the daughter only child of one of the wealthy businessman, Nixxie’s mother Song Meilin. As she was the only child, she was going to inherit everything her father Song Mingyu had.”“Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

“Unfortunately she fell in love with Xi Guiren who was a rising businessman at that time but he needed a back up of someone powerful. Seeing the hard-working young man her father, Song Mingyu helped him but he didn’t know, Xi Guiren will covet his daughter. Song Mingyu somewhere understood his intensions but in front of his daughter’s happiness, he had to give up and allowed her to marry him.”

“With Song Meilin, he had a son, Xi Guo and a daughter, Xi Nicky that is Nixxie.” Once Xi Guiren got hold of the business of his father-in-law, he was fearless and brought his mistress to the house and with her, he had one son, Xi Cheng.”

“Xi Cheng was elder to Xi Guo so it was obvious for Song Meilin to understand that her husband had this extramarital affair for long and all the time he was deceiving her. She was heartbroken but for the sake of her two kids, who loved their father a lot, she stayed silent and let them be in their house.”

“She somewhere pitied the mistress but that mistress had different motives as her son was not a legal child of that family because she was not the married wife. Xi Guiren didn’t divorce his wife so it was hard for the mistress to get hold of everything for the sake of her only son.”

Jiang Yang was listening to Lu Qiang while Lu Feng was looking somewhere far as he already knew everything and with each word from Lu Qiang he was remembering those incidences.

“Nixxxie’s mother, Song Meilin had the most part of the business on her name even more than her father, Xi Guiren because it was the business from her maternal side which she inherited being the only child of the one rich businessman.”

“Before the death, Song Meilin’s father, Song Mingyu created a will saying his daughter would be the only person to inherit whatever he had and put the condition that she can’t transfer the inheritance on her husband’s name or to anyone else. Her inheritance can only go to her kids and if something happens to her or the kids, it should straight away go to the charity. He made his daughter’s and grandchildren’s future safe as he thought of Xi Guiren as a greedy man.”

“A few years everything went fine with the sacrifices of Song Meilin to maintain peace in the house. Once their kids grew up and Xi Guo started to handle a business. The mistress and her son Xi Cheng were not happy because Xi Cheng was elder than Xi Guo and only lack with being a legal child.”

“The Mistress was a cunning woman and she planned something against Xi Guo who was young and just started to understand the business under the guidance of his mother and one person hired by her.”

“That mistress complained about it that why her son is not getting all this though he was the elder one, but, Xi Guiren

didn't bother himself with it. He knew Xi Guo was capable, though he was young and moreover he was his own son so it didn't matter to him that who will handle the business.”

## 304 Evil Stepbrother...

“Upon getting no favorable response from Xi Guiren, the mistress decided to use her own sources to help her son. She plotted against Xi Guo that eventually leads to his death. Her intention was to make him handicapped but he lost his life in that accident.”

“Everyone had a doubt on the mistress and Nixxxxie’s mother decided to go against her but her husband stopped saying he was sure that his mistress can’t do it. For him, his mistress was the best woman in the world as shown by her to him.”

“Finally she had to give up as there was no clear evidence, but there was a twist. Though the mistress planned to just harm Xi Guo and not his death, her son Xi Cheng plotted behind her back and ordered to convert that simple accident into the death of Xi Guo.”

“Bastard!” Suddenly Lu Feng cursed to remember the incident and his friend’s dead body which he held in his hands when Xi Guo took his last breath. He was the one who witnessed the accident but it ended up being a case of as driver was drunk so happened to hit him.

“Nixxxxie’s mother, Song Meilin got to know about it and confronted Xi Cheng. She even called police but there was no proof against him so he was free. Song Meilin started to become sick with the trauma she had because of the death of her only son and the regret that she couldn’t give him justice.”

“Soon Song Meilin realized, her daughter might be in a danger too so she transferred everything on her name and did the same thing that her father Song Mingyu did in the past before he died.”

“If something happened to her daughter, Nixxxxie, everything should go to the charity and she put few strict clauses that even after her death, nobody would be able to claim the property on her name.”

“Xi Guiren was unhappy with this decision of his wife though he loved his daughter Nixxie a lot. He couldn't do anything as everything belonged to his wife to start with. After that day, Nixxie's life is like a bird in a cage as they won't allow her to go anywhere but her mother was a strong woman to protect her daughter though she was getting weaker day by day.”

“Song Meilin warned them, especially Xi Cheng, not to meddle in her daughter's life or she will make everything go in charity as Nixxie was minor and as her mother, Song Meilin still held right over the inheritance as Nixxie's guardian.”

“Since that day, the mistress and her son are calm. Also, Nixxie's father, Xi Guiren warned them not to trouble his wife as she was weak. Somewhere Xi Guiren was aware of what his wife claimed about the death of their son was true but as he had only one son left, he ignored it but he made sure to keep his wife and daughter out from the trouble.”

“Now Nixxie is not minor and hold all the rights over the property. Xi Cheng is just waiting for the day when her mother will die and he will keep Nixxie in his hold so that he can take control over all the business keeping her as his puppet.”

“Hmm! I see. So her stepbrother is an A\*\* H\*\*e.” Jiang Yang was angry to hear it also felt sad for Nixxie.

“A\*\* H\*\*es are better than him,” Lu Feng too had the same reaction as Jiang Yang to which Lu Qiang nodded,

“Agreed!”“Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

Jiang Yang remembered the moments when her father and her brother came to the hospital, “That's why when those two came to visit her mother, she was so scared. I still can remember the fear I could see in her eyes.”

Lu Feng was aware of Nixxie's condition as he was keeping an eye on her after her brother's death and said, “Her father is not a problem but her stepbrother is. Knowing what his one son did to his other son, that man is still turning a blind eye to it. It's not long when that bastard, Xi Cheng will kill his own

father for his greed as he can't do anything to Nixxie and he will take over everything.”

Lu Qiang continued, “At that time I and Lu Feng were young and because of my father's accident I was busy with so many things. We both were powerless and couldn't do anything for our friend even after his unfortunate death. We will always regret this thing.”

Hearing it Lu Feng nodded and remember what his friend's wish, “He loved his sister a lot and he had so many dreams related to her that how he will make her live like a prince but all went away with his death and she is suffering in her own house.”

“But now you can help the person he left behind. Won't it be fair?” Jiang Yang asked.

Lu Qiang agreed, “Hmm! Let's see, what we can do for her and for you to get her in your life without much hustle.”

There was a knock on the door of the Gallery connecting to Jiang Yuyan's room. all three looked in the direction to see, Jiang Yuyan was standing in the door. She stepped towards them, “Have you guys done?”

All three nodded.

“Then, come downstairs as it's going to be a time for Mom and Dad to leave to the airport.”

They headed downstairs together and after talking for a while with them Jiang Peizhi and Mo Ruolan left to the airport. Once they left, these four left in the home so, Jiang Yang suggested having a drink together as it's been a while these friends drink together and didn't include Jiang Yuyan just three of them.

“After so many days we are together guys, let's get drinks together.”

The other three nodded. Seeing Jiang Yuyan saying yes to drink Jiang Yuyan spoke, “Not you Yuyan.”

“Why not. It's been a while since I tried it,” she asked.

Jiang Yang gave out a deep sigh, “Don't try something that can give us a headache. Your man is already trouble once he

drinks and I don't wish to handle you too."



# 305 Am I A Disaster For You?

“After so many days we are together guys, let’s have drinks.”

The other three nodded to what Jiang Yang said. Seeing Jiang Yuyan saying ‘yes’ to drink, Jiang Yuyan spoke, “Not you, Yuyan.”

“Why not? It’s been a while since I tried it,” she asked.

“Don’t try something that can give us a headache. Your man is already trouble once he drinks and I don’t wish to handle you too.”

“I am not a kid now. I can handle myself,” she argued.

Seeing these siblings bickering about the drinks, Lu Qiang and Lu Feng looked at them thinking what was it? They never saw Jiang Yuyan touching the alcohol and never thought about ‘why’ but now they were curious.

Noticing the curious expressions of his friends, Jiang Yang said, “Don’t be so curious to know the disastrous thing.”

Jiang Yuyan was not happy to hear it and moreover, she was already sulking with her brother’s denial to allow her to drink. “What the Heck? Am I a disaster for you?”

Jiang Yang was not affected by seeing her sulking and maintained his calm, “Not you but the alcohol that messes with your brain.”

“Nothing will happen. Let me try this once, please.” She pleaded that softened Lu Qiang and he said in her favor, “Let her try. I am here to handle her.”

Hearing it, Lu Feng had a teasing smile on his face, “See who is talking? The person, who can’t handle himself after getting a small peg.”

Jiang Yang laughed to hear it, “Haha! Right! These two are perfect in so many ways as a couple.”

Lu Qiang didn't deny it as he was totally aware of his low tolerance to alcohol, "Okay! I won't drink today. Instead, let her drink and I will be here to handle her."

Jiang Yuyan was happy to hear it and smiled to look at Lu Qiang while Jiang Yang spoke, "What a show of affection again!"

Lu Feng nodded, "Hmm! They never miss a chance to show off, especially, Lu Qiang."

"Yeah! He is always a show-off when it comes to Yuyan." Jiang Yang agreed.

Seeing the topic moving from alcohol to something else, Jiang Yuyan spoke, "Whatever it is but today I am going to drink." Saying it, Jiang Yuyan stood up from the couch and strode towards her father's liquor cabinet.

Seeing her, Jiang Yang jumped from the sofa and followed her. Before she could touch the cabinet, he stopped her, "Take it easy little birdie, let me get it for you."

"Don't call me that." Saying it she stepped back and let him pull out the liquor bottles from the cabinet.

Jiang Yang pulled out one brown color large size bottle and two small bottles.

Seeing the small bottles in her brother's hand she was not happy as she understood it was for her, "I don't want to drink this. I want one from this bottle" she pointed towards the other bottle from his hands.

Closing the cabinet Jiang Yang replied, "This is what you and your man should drink, a Breezer" saying it he put those two bottles of Breezer in her hand.

Holding it involuntarily she frowned, "No way. It is like a fruit juice with very little alcohol percentage. It's not what I want."

"Kids should listen to elders sometimes." Ignoring her, he turned to move towards the sofa.

Pouting her lips with sad expression on her face she followed him to the sofa. Both Lu Qiang and Lu Feng were observing this adorable pair of siblings with a smile on their faces. Jiang

Yang put the liquor bottles on the centre table and turned back to bring glasses from the cabinet while Jiang Yuyan sat beside Lu Qiang after putting the bottles in her hands on the table with 'Thud' sound that showed she was upset.

Patting her head gently, Lu Qiang tried to calm her down. Jiang Yang came back with four glasses in his hands and put them on the table too. Lu Feng opened the bottle that specially meant for him and Jiang Yang while Jiang Yang opened the breezer bottle for the love birds.

Jiang Yang poured it into the glasses and offered it to his sister. "You can drink this fruit juice directly with a bottle but just so that you can get the feeling of drinking an actual alcohol with us, I am giving it to you in the glass."

Jiang Yuyan unwillingly accepted it while glaring at her brother and Lu Qiang and Lu Feng found it funny. Both suppressed the smiles on their lips somehow, so that she won't feel more annoyed with this. Lu Qiang too obediently accepted what Jiang Yang offered to him as his woman was drinking the same and he wanted to give her a company. Moreover, he was never interested in alcohol much so it was not a big deal for him.

Lu Feng done filling up glasses and passed one to Jiang Yang but before Jiang Yang could take it, someone grabbed the glass and emptied it whole down the throat in just one go.

It happened so suddenly and unexpectedly that no one could react to it but to look at Jiang Yuyan who emptied the whole glass that made her face red and she coughed loudly as her throat was burning with it.

"Cough-Cough! It's burning.. Cough- Cough!"

Lu Qiang panicked to see her like this but didn't know what to do and just caressed her back as she was coughing while covering her throat because it was burning too much. "Are you fine" saying it, he looked at Jiang Yang and Lu Feng for help with worried expressions on his face.

Jiang Yang frowned, "Fuck! I should have been ready for this." "Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates,

better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

Lu Feng passed her a water bottle, “Drink water, it will lessen the burning in your throat.”

Lu Qiang took the bottle, opened the cap and made her drink it. Though it lowered a burning a bit, still it was not that better. Tears were rolling down from her eyes but she had to bear with it as she was the one to bring it upon her so there was no one to blame.

## 306 Drunk Yuyan..

Those three didn't know whether to laugh at her or to scold her to see her in a pitiful condition. They maintained neutral expressions on their faces to not make her feel bad though they felt like to laugh at her while holding their stomachs. The way those three were looking at each other, it showed they were laughing in their hearts.

Once Jiang Yuyan felt a bit better, she spoke, "Cough-Cough! It never burned like this when I drank in the past. What the hell it is? A Lava? My throat was like a volcano...Cough-Cough!"

This made them lose control over what these three were holding back and laughed loudly all together. Seeing them she glared at that them with angry gaze but didn't say a word.

Once they were done with laughing and Jiang Yuyan was done frowning, Jiang Yang replied, "I always gave you alcohol in a diluted form to make it with low alcohol percentage but now you drank this without dilution. Moreover, this one has the highest percentage of alcohol."

"I won't drink it ever." Saying it she drank some more water. Her face was still red.

"Nice to hear it but I am worried about what will happen in the next hour." Jiang Yang had an evil grin on his face.

"What do you mean?" she asked.

"Do you want me to record a video again?" in the past, Jiang Yang recorded her video to show her what she did when she was drunk.

"It was in the past. Now I am grown up. I will be fine."

"What past? It was one and half year back, when you turned eighteen, the legal age to drink. After that whenever you drank, I had to go through such a headache."

"One and a half years is a long-time brother."

“Really? Let’s see.”

Hearing their conversation, Lu Qiang was worried and said, “Should I take her to the doctor.”

“Don’t forget I am a doctor too but rest assure instead of her, we will need a doctor once alcohol hit her.” Jiang Yang replied and took the empty glass that his sister just emptied out in her stomach.

Lu Feng was smiling to see her. He found her so adorable like a little girl. “Stop it, Jiang Yang. It’s three of us to look after her so don’t worry.” Saying it he filled Jiang Yang’s glass again. Lu Qiang too agreed to Lu Feng’s words.

Jiang Yuyan was sitting calmly as not wanting to talk much because of her throat. These three let her be silent and started to talk about their things.

When all three were busy drinking and chatting, suddenly something happened that caught their attention. Jiang Yuyan was crying and the sound of her sobbing caught their attention.

Seeing her suddenly like this, Lu Qiang’s heart skipped a beat and he panicked, “W...What happened? Is it hurting somewhere? Show me.”

Hearing him, she started to cry even more which made him panicked.

Jiang Yang gave out a deep sigh and leaned back in a couch. He was not at all worried about her.

Lu Feng was worried to see her too. Seeing Jiang Yang not doing anything, he exclaimed, “Jiang Yang, you bloody doctor, see what happened to her.”

Lu Qiang too looked at him and said, “Check her.”

“She is not hurt anywhere. It’s the alcohol.” Saying it he resumed his drink.

“Huh?” Lu Qiang and Lu Feng both were stunned to hear it.

“Both of you wanted to see what happens to her, so go ahead. I can handle anything but not when she is crying. Leave me out of it,” He replied while swirling the glass in his hand.

“But, what should we do now?” Lu Qiang asked.

“Let her cry for some time and she will fall asleep soon,” Jiang Yang replied but Lu Qiang was still panicking as he was worried to see her crying and called her.

“Yuyan!” hearing her name, she looked at Lu Qiang with her teary eyes.

“Are you hurt somewhere?” he asked and she nodded.

“Where?” seeing her saying she was hurt, he was anxious. Lu Feng was worried too but Jiang Yang was smiling, “Ready to see the drama” and continued the drinking.

Jiang Yuyan showed her pinky finger to Lu Qiang while crying like a teenage girl.

Lu Qiang held her finger and caressing it gently he asked, “What happened?”

Finally, instead of crying, she spoke something, “Sob-Sob! My nail, it broke. It’s hurting.”

To Lu Qiang, it all looked fine and he asked, “Does your finger got caught in something.”

She shook her head as saying ‘No’ and spoke again, “See, it is not round and its corner is broken. I want it round.”

Hearing her, Lu Qiang didn’t know how to react. Jiang Yang laughed, “Here you go my brother-in-law.”

Lu Feng too didn’t know whether to laugh or pity Lu Qiang. He was smiling and tried not to laugh but seeing Jiang Yuyan, it was hard for him to control his laughter.

Lu Qiang collected himself and patted her head, “It’s okay. It will be fine till tomorrow when you will wake up.” Knowing, it was the effect of alcohol and she would be fine till morning, he had to lie to her as it was the only way to calm her down.

“Sob-Sob! Really?” she asked, looking into his eyes, still crying and sobbing.

Caressing her cheeks gently, Lu Qiang replied, “Yeah! Don’t you trust me?”

Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster

updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

“I do!” Saying it she hugged him.

“Are you hurt somewhere else?” He asked again.

Instead of feeling annoyed or laughing at her, he treated her the way she will like it. He went along with her, in her flow.

Jiang Yuyan nodded while burying her head in his chest.

“Where? Where is it hurting?” He asked.

“My tummy,” she replied.

“Is it hurting?”

“Something is inside and it is moving here and there and making noises.” Jiang Yuyan said not realizing, her brother had an evil mind.

“What? When did you impregnate my sister? How come I didn’t know about it?”



## 307 Acting Like A Spoiled Kid...

“What? When did you impregnate my sister? How come I didn’t know about it?” Though Jiang Yang knew what his sister meant, he didn’t let go of a chance to tease Lu Qiang.

“As you have got to know it now, so be happy and congrats, as you are going to be an uncle soon.” Saying it to Jiang Yang, Lu Qiang resumed his talk with Jiang Yuyan, “Once you eat something, it will be fine. Tell me what do you want to eat?”

Jiang Yang looked at Lu Feng and said, “See the show of affection again.”

Lu Feng smiled to hear it but he was happy the way Lu Qiang was handling Jiang Yuyan.

In a moment, Jiang Yuyan answered, “Ice-cream.”

Lu Qiang looked at Jiang Yang. Without him saying a single word, Jiang Yang stood up and went to the kitchen. He returned while carrying a bowl full of ice cream in his hands and handed over it to the Lu Qiang, “She is being a good girl with you, Lu Qiang or you didn’t know how hard it was for me to handle her in the past.”

Lu Qiang accepted a bowl, “She is always a good girl. Am I right, Yuyan?” Hearing it, Jiang Yuyan nodded while her eyes fixed on the ice-cream.

Lu Qiang started to feed her an ice-cream like she was a kid who can’t eat by herself. She stopped crying and focused on the ice-cream.

Seeing the soft-spoken Lu Qiang, Lu Feng remembered the way Lu Qiang used to handle Lu Lijun, “Your experience with Lu Lijun is working on your woman too.”

It was a different side of Lu Qiang. He looked like the most patient and caring person in the world and this side of him was

limited to only his loved ones. Before it was Lu Lijun and now Jiang Yuyan added to the list.

“Even I am surprised to see this cold person this much patient. He surpassed me with this,” said Jiang Yang. He continued, “I must say, this little birdie is lucky to have these patient men around her.”

Suddenly, Jiang Yuyan started to cry again after Lu Qiang was finally able to calm her down.

“Didn’t you like the ice-cream?” Lu Qiang asked.

“I did?” Jiang Yuyan replied while crying like a kid.

“Then?”

“Brother Yang called me, little birdie.” Saying it she started to cry even more.

Lu Qiang looked at Jiang Yang, “Apologies to her.”

“Huh? What did I do?” Jiang Yang was startled with this sudden demand.

“For what you called her,” Lu Qiang answered.

“Little birdie?”

“Hmm!”

Jiang Yang was in a mood to tease his sister and trouble Lu Qiang even more as to test his patience with Jiang Yuyan, “What should I call her then? She is acting like a spoiled kid, in front of you!”

Looking at Jiang Yang with an annoyed gaze, Lu Feng spoke, “Apologies to her, Jiang Yang.” Saying it he passed a tissue paper box to Lu Qiang.

“Sigh! You guys are making me apologize for the thing that I do always.” Jiang Yang was unwilling as it was a normal thing for him to call her like this even though she didn’t like it.

Hearing it, both Lu Qiang and Lu Feng gave him an angry glare.

“Okay! As you guys say.” Saying it, Jiang Yang looked at his sister, “Brother is sorry, Yuyan.”

Jiang Yuyan didn't reply to her brother's apology but stopped crying. Lu Qiang cleared her face with the help of tissue papers and as usual cleaned her nose too but this time she didn't resist and let him do it like an obedient kid. Later, she quietly continued eating ice-cream.

Seeing it, Jiang Yang couldn't hold himself back, "Man, my sister is making you do all kinds of stuff for her, cleaning her nose too."

"It's fine as long as I don't need to clean yours," Lu Qiang replied while still feeding ice-cream to Jiang Yuyan.

"Why would you? I have my own darling to do it for me," saying it he looked at Lu Feng and winked with a teasing smile on his face.

Lu Feng was not affected by this, "Rest assured, soon you will be like Lu Qiang, cleaning a nose of your woman whenever she cries, forgetting me, your darling."

"How can I forget you, Lu Feng? You will always be my darling, even if I have a harem filled with women."

"Spare me from your love, Jiang Yang."

"I will, but on the day when there will be someone in your life and you will clean her nose whenever she cries."

"I told you already, there won't be anyone," Lu Feng said with a firm voice.

Lu Feng never ever thought about having any woman in his life other than Jiang Yuyan. Unfortunately, she couldn't be his woman but that didn't mean his love for her will die ever. He accepted the fact that she won't be his but he also decided that in his heart, there won't be anyone ever.

Lu Qiang didn't say anything about this matter as he understood Lu Feng and his decisions which were impossible to change. He could just hope for his brother to get someone in the future and be happy with her.

The fact that Lu Qiang was never jealous of Lu Feng being around Jiang Yuyan was his trust in him, even though he was aware of how much Lu Feng loved her. It was the unfortunate

thing for him that both of them fell in love with the same woman but he knew, No one can control the matter of hearts. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

Lu Qiang trusted Lu Feng that he won't ever have any ill intentions towards Jiang Yuyan ever in his life and he will always try to protect her. He knew, Lu Feng already accepted the reality and he was happy for him and Yuyan being together. For Lu Qiang, Lu Feng was the person who could never harm anyone.

## 308 Letting Out A Sorrow...

Soon Jiang Yuyan fell asleep while resting her head in Lu Qiang's lap. All gave out a sigh of relief to see her calm.

"I was worried about how to handle her but I guess, Lu Qiang's presence made her calm or I would have spent my whole night handling her tantrums and wiping her tears," said Jiang Yang while looking at Jiang Yuyan's calm babyface.

"What do you mean by it? Does she behave something different than this?" Lu Qiang asked and Lu Feng too looked at Jiang Yang to know what he meant.

"Whenever she drinks and alcohol hits her, she started to cry nonstop for no valid reason," Jiang Yang replied.

"Hmm! I just saw it. It's fine and nothing to be worried about," Lu Qiang replied.

Lu Feng nodded to what Lu Qiang said, "Yeah! Why are you over-reacting about it, Jiang Yang," Lu Feng was more concerned about Jiang Yuyan and just like Lu Qiang, he was okay with however she liked to behave.

Jiang Yang exclaimed, "Over reacting? Huh? What you saw, it was just one percent of what she does every time."

"What exactly she does?" Lu Qiang asked.

Jiang Yang started to narrate them, "First time when she drank I never thought, I will see her like this. We can expect a person to do crazy things or cry if there something really valid to cry about but she do it without any reason. I feel like as if she searches anything stupid to cry over for to let out her hidden sorrow. I spent my whole night by wiping her tears and trying to console her for not to cry. It's not just once. She does it all the time but today she didn't stretch it for a long."

"It's fine as everyone has their own way to react when alcohol hit them." Lu Feng interrupted him.

Caressing the head of Jiang Yuyan, Lu Qiang looked at Lu Feng, “I agree but it’s hard to see her reacting like this to even extremely hurting things. She can be the way too cold. I saw her cold side.”

“Lu Qiang is right. Since that incident happened with her, she never cried after coming out of it in a few months. She was less expressive, just used to observe and store everything in her brain. She never demanded for anything and she was always silent till she took her revenge with that boy. The period when she should have cried, she kept everything buried inside her.”

Hearing it, Lu Qiang and Lu Feng both felt heaviness in their chest to think about a kind of a thing she had gone through in such a young age. Both looked at her calm face with love in their eyes for her.

“I think the reason behind her not crying much today is the presence of Lu Qiang in her life.”

Both looked at Jiang Yang with questioning gazes to know what it was.

Jiang Yang continued, “She hates to cry and still avoid showing her tears to anyone. Since Lu Qiang came to her life, I saw her crying without resisting and showing how she felt. She cried without any hesitation when she was not drunk. This is a good thing as she is expressing herself and now she doesn’t need a reason of alcohol to cry out.”

Lu Qiang didn’t know how to react. Whether he should be happy to know, she was cried because of him or sad to see her taking the help of alcohol to let out her sorrows. He didn’t want her to cry because of him ever but what Jiang Yang said, made sense and he won’t ever want her to take the help of alcohol for anything.

Jiang Yang looked at Lu Qiang who looked immersed in deep thoughts, “Don’t think much about the things Lu Qiang. You, being in her life is the best thing that could happen to her.”

“Hmm! I hope so too and I will try to make every moment of her life to be best,” Lu Qiang replied not being sure about

anything.

Lu Feng noticed Lu Qiang's expressions. He looked worried for her, "You are already doing it for her Lu Qiang. You don't have to do much, just be with her always."

"Hmm! Lu Feng is right," said Jiang Yang.

"This is the thing I can and always want to do it for her, being with her always and forever."

Once the talk between friends was over, it was midnight and they decided to go to sleep. Lu Qiang carried Jiang Yuyan to her bedroom while Jiang Yang took Lu Feng to his room. Lu Qiang put her in a bed and slept beside her while covering them with the quilt.

He continued looking at her without blinking an eye. He was trying to feel her pain that she kept buried in her heart for long. Though she was out of it, some unseen wounds are hard to heal completely. He kissed her on the forehead and slept while holding her in his embrace.

In Jiang Yang's bedroom, Lu Feng and Jiang Yang were in a bed, ready to sleep. Suddenly, Lu Feng asked, "Do you think, Yuyan is out of her past now?"  
Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

"Not completely as it is impossible to forget such thing but she has something with her now to replace her sorrows with the happiness and that will keep her going ahead," Jiang Yang answered.

Lu Feng continued staring at the ceiling while lying in a bed, "I wish her to be happy always."

"We all wish the same." Jiang Yang said and both fell asleep soon.

Next morning, Lu Qiang woke up but Jiang Yuyan was still sleeping. He didn't disturb her and went to the bathroom to freshen up. Soon he was out after having a shower and wrapped in a towel around his waist.

It was Jiang Yuyan's room so he didn't have clothes to wear in her room. he decided to go to Jiang Yang's room to get a pair of clothes for him.



# 309 Sign Of Being A Healthy Man...

Lu Qiang went out of the room to go to Jiang Yang's bedroom. He knocked on the door but as there was no reply from inside, Lu Qiang didn't wait for a second and entered the room.

Just then Lu Feng came out of the bathroom, wrapped in a white towel around his waist too.

Seeing Lu Feng, Lu Qiang asked, "You woke up?"

Lu Feng nodded, "Hmm! Need to get out of here before this moron wakes up and start to bug me." Saying it he signaled towards Jiang Yang who was sleeping with his face buried in a pillow.

"Hmm!" Lu Qiang understood him.

Just then Jiang Yang spoke up in his sleepy voice, "I can hear you, darling. Don't you dare to run away from me?" Saying it he turned and sat up in a bed. "After keeping me awake the whole night, how can you just run away from your love?"  
Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

"Me? Kept you awake? You were the one sleeping soundly while dreaming about your woman. See the proof." Lu Feng pointed towards Jiang Yang's awakened friend.

Lu Qiang smiled to hear it and looked at Jiang Yang where Lu Feng pointed.

Jiang Yang looked downwards and after taking a look at his friend who was awakened and trying to get out of his night pajama, "So what? It's a sign of me being a healthy man. Doesn't it happen to you? If not then you can take a look at mine whenever you want."

"I don't need to as mine is better than you," Lu Feng replied and turned to go towards the wardrobe.

“Really? Let me take a look then,” saying it Jiang Yang got out of the bed, being ready to step towards Lu Feng.

Lu Qiang stepped back to stay away from these two as knowing what was going to happen.

“Stay back Jiang Yang.” Saying it Lu Feng stepped away from him, sensing his true intentions.

“No way. I want to see what my darling actually has.” Jiang Yang moved forward with a teasing smile on his face.

“You, A\*\* h\*\*e!” Lu Feng gripped the towel around his waist with his hands but while moving back, he forgot there was a couch behind him.

With an evil grin on his face, Jiang Yang stepped forward as he knew, Lu Feng was going to be stopped by the couch behind him.

Lu Qiang was enjoying to see Lu Feng in trouble. When it came to being shameless, no one could beat Jiang Yang and it was the thing that brought back their lively past back to them.

“Go after Lu Qiang. Don’t mess with me or it would be bad for your morning healthy thing.” Lu Feng had angry expressions on his face.

“I am not concerned with Lu Qiang’s thing as long as my sister is happy with him and his thing. I am interested in my darling’s thing.” Saying it moved ahead waiting for Lu Feng to fall on the couch.

Lu Qiang ignored them and moved towards the wardrobe to get clothes for himself while these two were busy in bickering with each other.

Just in the next step backward, Lu Feng stumbled upon with the hand rest of the couch and fell back on the sofa with his legs resting on the hand rest. Being startled with sudden hurdles behind him and to protect himself from falling down he freed his hands from gripping the towel and to hold something but still he couldn’t stop himself from falling on the couch.

Jiang Yang was smiling to see him falling on the couch as it was what he exactly expected to happen and for what he was waiting for while engaging Lu Feng in a talk. He strode towards Lu Feng and pulled out his towel in a full force while Lu Feng immediately grabbed a cushion from a couch and covered his private thing.

The force Jiang Yang used was too strong that when he pulled the towel and let go it from his hands, it fled in the direction of the door which was half opened by someone to enter the room. Before the person could even see inside the room, that towel fell on the person's face, stopping to see what was happening inside?

“What is this?” A sound came from the person whose face was covered in a towel.

Hearing a voice, all three looked in the direction of the door. When they realized who it was, they were shocked with their eyes opened. The most shocked person was Lu Feng, who was lying naked on the couch holding a pillow to cover his manhood.

Lu Qiang strode towards the door before the person could remove the towel from the face. Lu Qiang stopped the person from taking it out completely before it was too late.

At the same time, without waiting for a single moment, Lu Feng jumped on the floor on another side of the bed and that was not visible from the door.

Seeing it Jiang Yang gave out a sigh of relief and stepped to stand behind the couch while holding a cushion from the couch to cover his thing.

When Lu Qiang left Jiang Yuyan's room, she woke up in a while. Her head was hurting because of the tiny dose of alcohol strong alcohol she had the previous night. She remembered being with Lu Qiang but she couldn't remember what happened after that.

Getting out of the bed while pressing her temples with her fingers, she decided to go to her brother's room to ask him about Lu Qiang. If he stayed back in the Jiang residence, it

was obvious that he would be with her in the bed but upon not seeing him around, she wanted to know what happened the previous night.

When she somehow reached in front of the door of Jiang Yang's room with her badly hurting head, she slowly knocked on the door once but there was no reply though she could hear the sounds from inside.

# 310 Awkwardness Everywhere...

Lu Feng and Jiang Yang were busy teasing and mocking each other and between their loud voices and laugh from Jiang Yang, no one could hear the knocking on the door. Moreover, the knocking was so light as Jiang Yuyan felt there was no energy left inside her.

Upon not hearing any response from inside, Jiang Yuyan half-opened the door but before she could see what was happening inside the room, a towel fell on her face.

Once Lu Feng hid on the other side of the bed, Lu Qiang removed the towel from Jiang Yuyan's face while Jiang Yang stood up behind the couch while holding a cushion in front of his waist to hide his proof of being a healthy man.

Jiang Yuyan looked at Lu Qiang with puzzled expressions, but before she could say anything, Lu Qiang hugged her, "Good morning love."

"Good morning!" Saying it she looked around in the room. Lu Qiang and Jiang Yang had smiles on their faces but she found it fake, "What is going on here?"

Lu Qiang didn't know how to answer her and before he could say anything, her sight noticed one hand from the other side of the bed that was pulling a bedsheet from the bed, "Who is that? Lu Feng?"

Hearing it, Lu Feng's hands froze and his heartbeats raced. He couldn't help but curse Jiang Yang in his mind, 'Damn this, Jiang Yang.'

The atmosphere in the entire room was filled with awkwardness.

"Sister, why don't you take your man with you and rest in your room for some time more?" said Jiang Yang, with an awkward smile on his face while still holding the cushion.

Lu Qiang agreed to what Jiang Yang said, “Hmm! Let’s go to your room, Yuyan.”

Jiang Yuyan noticed her brother’s behavior and till now she understood that Lu Feng was hiding. She felt awkward, though she didn’t understand it clearly. “I will just go. You guys continue what you were doing.” Saying it, she turned around and left before Lu Qiang could say anything to her.

“I will be in the room once I get clothes for myself,” Lu Qiang said to look at her retreating back.

Jiang Yuyan nodded without turning back and left.

Lu Qiang closed the door and looked at Jiang Yang, “Do you think she got it?”

“My sister is smart. Looking at me standing with a pillow and smiling awkwardly, she got it for sure.”

Hearing the sound of the door closing, Lu Feng peeked out his head up to see if Jiang Yuyan was gone. He pulled the bedsheet and wrapped around himself. Lu Feng was angry and he strode towards Jiang Yang, “You moron! Soon I will make your photo frame haggling on the wall.”

“What are you so angry for man, I couldn’t see anything as my sister came at the right moment.”

Lu Feng went to him and without giving him a chance to react, he pushed Jiang Yang back to the all behind being ready to hit him.

“Brother-in-law save me.” Jiang Yang shouted but Lu Qiang ignored him.

“It’s between you and your darling, don’t involve me in it.” saying it Lu Qiang pulled out a set of clothes for him, “By the way, thank you so much for the clothes, Jiang Yang.”

Before Jiang Yang could say anything further, Lu Feng punched him in the face. “Aaaaahh! It hurts. You broke my tooth.”

Lu Feng was about to hit him again, just then Jiang Yang spoke again, “Wait!” Lu Feng stopped to see what Jiang Yang wanted to say before getting beaten up badly by him.

Jiang Yang looked at Lu Qiang and said, "Brother-in-law, save me for the sake of my sister who loves you a lot."

Hearing it Lu Qiang turned to look at them, "Let him go Lu Feng or Yuyan will be worried to see him bruised."

Lu Feng stopped to hear Jiang Yuyan's name and let go of Jiang Yang.

Jiang Yang looked at Lu Feng with a mischievous smile on his face, "I should have directly said this to you that let me go for the sake of Yuyan. sometimes I forget you love her too."

Hearing Jiang Yang's words, Lu Feng looked at Lu Qiang, "Do you really want me to let him go, Lu Qiang?"

"My bad. Do whatever you want him but it should not be visible." Saying it Lu Qiang left the room.

Lu Feng looked at Jiang Yang but before he could hit him, Jiang Yang went back to his shameless self, "Come to me darling and do whatever you want. I will make sure not make any sound." "Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

Lu Feng was in a full mood to bit Jiang Yang but his shameless behavior made him move away from him.

"What happened darling, why are you going away from me?"

"A\*\* H\*\*e!" Lu Feng frowned.

"Well, you can call me like this because as a man I can offer you only this thing."

"What the f\*\*k!" Jiang Yang's bold words left Lu Feng with no words and he just preferred to get ready quietly.

Jiang Yang laughed to see Lu Feng getting annoyed and went to the bathroom to get freshen up.

In Jiang Yuyan's room...

When Lu Qiang went back to Jiang Yuyan's room while holding clothes in his hands, he saw her sitting in a couch with her eyes closed. "Is your head hurting?" Saying it he started to wear his clothes.

Jiang Yuyan nodded with her eyes still closed, “What happened last night after I drank?”

“Nothing much. I saw my Yuyan from her childhood days.”

“I must have trouble you then?”

“Not at all. You were being a good girl and It was like I was handling my own daughter.”

“Good to hear it but still thank you for handling me.”

Lu Qiang buttoned up his shirt and went to her to sit beside her on the couch, “You don’t need to. I was glad to see another side of yours as it’s like I am getting to know about you even more. I think I am yet to know a lot more things.”



## 311 Scared Of Herself..

“I think I am yet to know a lot more things about you, Yuyan,” said Lu Qiang.

“You and brother Yang know me better than myself, isn’t it enough?”

“It is but I want to know each and everything about you.”

Looking into Lu Qiang’s eyes, Jiang Yuyan asked with serious expressions on her face, “What if I have something inside me that is very dangerous?”“Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

“I don’t mind it as we all have something dangerous hidden inside us and we don’t want it to come out but sometimes situations made us bring it out,” Lu Qiang replied.

“I wish, I never had to face anything that will bring out that side of me out, ever again,” Jiang Yuyan looked very serious unlike her usual self as she was worried and scared of herself.

“It won’t happen as long as I am with you.”

Jiang Yuyan nodded “I know. You are the reason of me being sane now.”

Lu Qiang didn’t know what to say as there was something in her eyes and she looked scared of something but he just preferred to hug her to calm her down.

Once Jiang Yuyan was calm, she asked, “Was brother Yang teasing Lu Feng again?”

Lu Qiang nodded, “Hmm!”

Lu Qiang helped Jiang Yuyan to get freshen up as she was still suffering from a hangover. All went to the living room. Breakfast was ready and Jiang Yang asked everyone to come to the dining table.

Lu Feng was embarrassed in front of Jiang Yuyan. Though she didn't see him, he was aware, she must have got what was happening inside the room when she came there. "I won't have breakfast. I will leave as I have some work to do."

"Early morning, who works? You don't need to be embarrassed as we didn't see anything. Your manhood is still safe from our curious gazes," Jiang Yang's words made Lu Feng hide in the hole somewhere.

"It's only you Jiang Yang, the one with curious gaze, not all of us," said Lu Qiang while walking along with Jiang Yuyan who was behaving as she didn't know what they were talking about.

Lu Feng didn't know how to stop Jiang Yang so he preferred to keep silent as Jiang Yuyan was there and went to the dining room quietly with Jiang Yang but on the way he whispered in his ears, "Can't you give your blatant mouth rest once in a while?"

"What did you say, Lu Feng? I couldn't hear you. Say it loud."

"You....." Lu Feng swallowed his words.

When it was time, all left for their destinations. Lu Qiang dropped Jiang Yuyan to the university and left for the Lu Corporation. Lu Feng left for his secret work and Jiang Yang left for the hospital.

On the way to the hospital, Jiang Yang was thinking about Nixxie and he was excited to see her. Once he was in the hospital, he was busy with his work as usual but before he could go to see Nixxie's mother, an emergency came up.

It was a Monday, so Nixxie was aware of Jiang Yang would be in the hospital and he will come to see her mother.

Somewhere in her heart, she missed him and she was excited to see him but scared and anxious at the same time.

After that sudden kiss, she didn't know how to face him or how to react once he would be in front of her. When it was time for the doctor's visit, she was ready to face him with her heart pounding faster. When the door of the room opened,

there was another doctor who came to for the follow up on her mother in the absence of Jiang Yang.

Nixxie's heart sank not to see Jiang Yang, "Today too, is it an off for doctor Jiang Yang?"

"Doctor Jiang Yang is busy with one emergency surgery, he will be free in one hour. If you want to discuss something with him about your mother, you can visit him in his cabin once he is free." Saying it, the doctor stepped towards Nixxie's mother.

Nixxie didn't know what to do and stood beside her mother to see what the doctor was going to say.

"She is fine now and we can discharge her in the next few days," said the doctor.

"That's a relief to hear." Nixxie was happy to see her mother's improved health condition.

"But, more than us, what doctor Jiang Yang decides, that is important," said the doctor.

"Hmm!" Nixxie nodded.

The doctor left and Nixxie sat beside her mother while holding her hand in hers, "You are fine now. I am so happy, mom."

"I have to be better or who would look after my dear daughter?" Song Meilin said while caressing her daughter's hand.

"Not for me mom but you have to be better for yourself. You have gone through the struggle for all these years so I want you to see happy days as I am an adult now and I can protect both of us now."

Song Meilin smiled to see her thoughtful daughter and asked, "Since few days, I didn't see doctor....." She was unable to recall the name just then Nixxie spoke, "Doctor Jiang Yang?"

"Hmm! That one. I didn't see him in past two days if I am not wrong."

“He was on his weekly off but today he is in hospital so we can see him.” When Nixxxie was talking about him, her face was shining and her eyes looked brighter. Her mother didn’t fail to notice it.

“He seems an interesting person,” Song Meilin said with a smile on her face

“Huh?” these words from her mother startled Nixxxie.

“Don’t you think so?” her mother asked again.

“I don’t know him much,” Nixxxie replied.

“I thought both of you know each other even before we came to the hospital.”

“Not much. He is my friend’s brother but I never talked to him. It’s just as we are here, I had to talk..to..him.” Her last words were not clear and confident and it clicked something for her mother but she didn’t say anything, “Okay! I understood.”

## 312 Unwanted Guest..

Half a day passed by but Jiang Yang didn't come to check on Nixxie's mother. Although Nixxie was aware that he must be busy with his surgeries, the memories of a kiss from that night were making her anxious. She thought, he must be trying to avoid her after thinking it was a mistake. This thought was not letting her sit in peace.

Jiang Yang was in his cabin after done with the surgeries while going through the reports of the patients. There was a knock on the door. Hearing it, Jiang Yang replied, "Come in."

The person entered inside. Jiang Yang took a deep breath and said without looking at the person knowing who that was, "How are you, Nixxie?"

The anxiousness made Nixxie come to Jiang Yang. She asked nurses if Jiang Yang was back from the surgery. Once she got to know he was free, she came to see him with the excuse to know about her mother's condition.

Hearing him, calling her name without even looking at her, she was surprised to know how he knew that she was there. She sat in the chair and Jiang Yang looked at her. The moment their eyes met, her heart skipped a beat and she forgot why she came to meet him.

He was looking amazingly handsome in his doctor's white apron with his blue color shirt visible through it as the buttons on the apron were undone. The top button of the shirt was undone too, showing his neck and the part below it. His deep golden brown hair was neatly arranged, making him look fresh, even after he had been a busy whole day. There was no sign of tiredness on his face.

With his bright brown eyes, he was looking at her waiting for her to speak while Nixxie was unknowingly busy in observing his face. Her sight involuntarily moved from his hair, his bright brown eyes, tiny but a pointed nose, lips with a smile on them, well-shaped jaw up to his chin.

The moment, her eyes moved downwards toward his neck, Jiang Yang spoke, “Do you want me to undone the other buttons on the shirt?”

Hearing his words and coming back to her senses with her eyes opened wide, Nixxxie gulped, “I...I came to talk about my mother.”

“Hmm! When did I say you came here after thinking about that kiss every moment, for these past two days?” he said straight staring into her eyes.

“Cough-Cough! I...I want...to know...When my mother can get discharged from the hospital?”

Jiang Yang didn't tease her much and went back to his duty of being a doctor of her mother. “She is fine now. After going through a few more tests to confirm her current condition, we can discharge her at the end of this week if everything is fine in her reports.”

Hearing a serious talk from him, Nixxxie felt relieved and replied, “Okay!”, She asked again to make sure, “She will be fine right? I mean she won't have any problem later.”

Jiang Yuyan sensed the obvious worry of a daughter for her mother, “For now she is fine but I can't tell you about the future as I am just a doctor who can treat her and help her to get well as soon as possible. You have to take care of her so that she will take proper rest and look after her health.”

“Hmm! I understand. I will take care of her.”

When the talk about her mother was over and there was nothing more to talk about, Nixxxie stood up from the chair, “I will take a leave now.

Jiang Yang nodded and she stepped towards the door.

Looking at her retreating back, Jiang Yang called her, “Nixxxie!”

“Huh?” she turned around.

“How about lunch together, tomorrow?” he asked.

“Lunch?”

“Hmm!”

“In the hospital?”

“Yeah! Here, in my cabin, if you don’t mind.”

“Okay!” Agreeing to his wish, she left the cabin.

Once she left the cabin, exhaling out from the mouth, Jiang Yang leaned back in his chair.

As Nixxie came out from the cabin and closed the door, she looked around to check if anyone was there. Seeing no one, she gave out a sigh of relief as she was able to face Jiang Yang. She patted her chest as her heart was running faster when she was sitting in front of him but tried not to show it.

Slowly she was getting pulled towards him even if she knew she should not go that way. She wanted to say no for lunch but ended up saying yes. When she went back to the room, someone was there and she didn’t like it.

“What are you doing here?” she exclaimed.

“I am here to see my stepmother.” That was Xi Cheng, Nixxie’s stepbrother. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

Song Meilin too didn’t look happy to see him and she was looking in another direction but him.

Nixxie stepped towards her mother’s bed and looked at him in the eyes, “If you are done, you can leave.”

Xi Cheng smirked to see her, “Hmm! Seems like little bird is not happy to see me here”

“My mother needs to rest so.....”

Without letting her complete her line, Xi Cheng interrupted her, “I want her to rest nicely and forever but it’s her who doesn’t want to rest.”

Hearing it, Nixxie’s was angry but she couldn’t help but grit her teeth and clench her fist. She was helpless in front of him and moreover, she had to be calm for now for the sake of her sick mother.

Seeing her angry, Xi Cheng left with an evil grin on his face. Nixxie went to her mother, "Are you fine? Did he do something to you."

"Don't worry dear, he can't do anything even if he wants too." Nixxie's mother replied. She was still having trouble breathing so she avoided talking more.

"You rest mother. Soon I will show him his place."

"You have to be careful. Though he can't harm you, I am still worried that with what plan he will come up."

"Hmm! I know. For now just rest."



# 313 That Kiss..You Didn't Stop Me...

The next day, Jiang Yang went to check on Song Meilin. Nixxie's face was shining brightly to see him and her mother didn't fail to see how her daughter's site was following him without missing for a single moment.

Jiang Yang did the check-up routine, asking a few questions to Song Meilin about how she was feeling and if there was any problem she had. He was being in his doctor's form that he didn't look at Nixxie even once. Till now Nixxie understood he won't give attention to anything when he is doing his job as a doctor and she found it attractive.

Song Meilin looked at him who was busy noting down the things in her record file. "I didn't see you here for long, Doctor Jiang Yang," Song Meilin asked

"I was busy with other things, Mrs. Xi. Important surgeries, but I hope other doctors took care of you properly," he replied.

Song Meilin nodded, "Hmm! They did." "Find authorized novels in Webnovel, faster updates, better experience, Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

Jiang Yang spoke again, "Your condition is stable and better now so in a few days you will get a discharge."

"Good to know it."

Finishing his work, Jiang Yang passed his sight across Nixxie and left the room. Soon it was lunchtime and the nurse was helping Song Meilin to eat food.

Seeing her daughter, sitting quietly and not having her lunch, Song Meilin asked, "Why are you not having lunch, Nicky?"

"Umm... Mom... I am not hungry yet. I will have a lunch in some time," She replied.

Once Song Meilin finished her lunch and nurse left, she asked, “Nicky, What’s the matter?”

Being startled with her mother’s question, Nixxxie looked at her, “Nothing mom, it’s just ....” She didn’t know what to say to her mother.

“Tell me.”

“Doctor Jiang Yang asked me for lunch together so....” She stopped.

“Then?” Song Meilin was waiting for her to say further.

“Mom, he is your doctor so I said yes,” Nixxxie replied hesitantly.

Hearing it Song Meilin smiled, “So why are you sitting here? Go.”

Nixxxie looked at her mother in a surprise.

“Even if you are not hungry, Doctor Jiang Yang must be starving as he is working hard to treat patients like me. You should not keep him waiting.”

Nixxxie didn’t know what to say to her mother and stood from her place, thinking her mother’s words as her approval, “I will be back in some time.”

Song Meilin nodded with a smile on her face as giving her permission.

Her daughter was grown up now. Till now she lived her life maintaining certain limits but how she was behaving at the moment was a normal thing to happen with a girl of her age. Understanding her daughter’s feelings, she didn’t want to stop her. For Song Meilin, her daughter had a right to live her life the way she wanted just like the other girls of her age.

Nixxxie went to Jiang Yang’s cabin where he was waiting for her. “Glad to see you here.”

Nixxxie didn’t talk much and stepped towards the table. Jiang Yang stood up from the table and went to her. Holding her hand he took her to another door in his cabin.

Nixxxie was startled with a sudden touch from him to hold her hand but she followed him without saying a single word.

Behind the door, there was a small room for him to rest whenever he is tired after the surgeries he performed

It was not a big place. A small and cozy one with a small bed, only one person could sleep on it. There was a two-seater tiny coffee table, a small one door wardrobe to keep his essential clothes and doctors' aprons. The coffee table was beside a glass window through which one could see the outside view while sitting there sipping a coffee.

When they entered inside, food was already there on the table, in packed parcels.

Letting her hand go, Jiang Yang went to the coffee table and pulled out one chair for her, "Well this is not my home so I hope you are fine with me calling you for lunch to this tiny room."

"No. It's fine." Saying it she walked towards the table which was just three steps away from her as the room was small. She sat in the chair.

Jiang Yang sat in the other chair and started to unpack the food. "It's hospital food so you have to bear with it."

"It's not that bad. I am eating it for long now." Nixxxie was feeling comfortable now and she was talking without any hesitation. It was in Jiang Yang's personality to make anyone comfortable around him.

Though being a daughter from a rich family and living a luxurious lifestyle, she found it amusing to be in this tiny place for lunch. She had never done this before. She helped Jiang Yang to unpack the food.

Unpacking the last container, he said, "Well, there is no dish here to serve food, so we have to share food in one container and I hope you are fine with it."

Nixxxie was hesitant but said yes, "it's fine."

"Gosh, there are so many things you have to adjust here with me and I had to ask you every time the same thing, 'I hope if

you don't mind'."

"No really. It's fine. I can share in one bowl," she replied.

"Hmm! After sharing a kiss, anyways it's not a big deal to eat in one dish or a bowl." He said while passing chopsticks to her.

Without reacting to it, she accepted the chopsticks and looked at the food. She avoided looking into his eyes while Jiang Yang was looking at her with a smile on his face and admiration for her in his eyes.

"Shall we start?" he asked.

"Hmm!" she nodded.

Having a few bites in silence and not talking much, Jiang Yang decided to break the silence, "About that kiss."

Nixxie stopped eating and gulped while looking down, avoiding to look at him.

Jiang Yang continued, "That kiss. You didn't stop me."

## 314 Apologetic Lu Feng...

“That kiss. You didn’t stop me,” Jiang Yang said.

“I..I was sleepy so I couldn’t process what was happening so....” Saying it Nixxie stopped not knowing what to say.

“I thought, you waited for me every night to come in the room and pat your head.” All the time Jiang Yang was aware that she was pretending to sleep.

Hearing it, she felt like a thief got caught and she didn’t know how to reply to him. Seeing her embarrassed he changed the topic, “You missed your classes for so many days.”

“Hmm! I will catch up with it once I will go back to university. Jiang Yuyan is there to help me.” She gave out a sigh of relief because of the change in a topic.

“Right!” He thought about something and asked, “You are here with me. Your mother, does she knows about it?”

She nodded, “I told her and she said okay.”

Jiang Yang smiled, “Seems like, you have a cool mother like mine.”

“She loves me a lot,” Nixxie replied.

With this talk, the atmosphere came to life but the next question from Jiang Yang took it back to where it was. “What about your father and brother?”

“They are busy in business so I don’t get much time to spend with them” She didn’t want to tell him anything about her family. She couldn’t lie saying they love her too as Jiang Yang already witnessed the reality between them.

Seeing her in a dilemma, Jiang Yang didn’t ask her anything and instead changed the topic, “Tomorrow there would be few tests of your mother, if everything is fine in the reports, you are free to leave this hospital.”

Hearing his last words 'you are free to leave this hospital' she looked at him in his eyes. He spoke again, "I won't be able to see you this often."

She felt the same way that he felt. She knew, they won't be able to see each other this often and that made her feel sad deep down in her heart but she didn't show it on her face.

"But we can meet sometimes once in a while," He said.

Nixxxie almost ended up saying 'Yes' but changed her words, "I don't think so, as I would be busy with my studies and looking after my mother." She was aware of her condition and came back to her senses knowing the reality that she can't continue what she was feeling right now.

"You are right." Jiang Yang was aware of her condition too but he didn't want to give up or force her.

His answer surprised her as she expected him to be persistent about meeting her. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

The lunch was over and both came out of that small restroom to Jiang Yang's cabin just to see someone was waiting for them sitting in the chair.

"Lu Feng, when did you come?" saying it Jiang Yang strode towards him while Nixxxie was shocked to see Lu Feng there.

Lu Feng was expecting to see her in the hospital but not in Jiang Yang's cabin. He was equally surprised to see Nixxxie there as much she was upon seeing him there.

"How are you, Nicky?" Lu Feng came back to his senses and asked.

"As usual, fine." She replied having not so happy expressions on her face.

Before Lu Feng could ask or say anything to her, she looked at Jiang Yang who could sense the tension between them.

"Thanks for the lunch Doctor Jiang Yang. I will take leave as my mother must be waiting for me." saying it to Jiang Yang

she stepped towards the door but before she could open it, Lu Feng stopped her, "Please wait, Nicky."

She stopped in her track, while holding the handle of the door but didn't say a single word.

"I want to talk to you," Lu Feng said.

She didn't reply and stood there frozen with a cold expression on her face, facing her back towards him, waiting to hear him.

Seeing her stopped and ready to hear him, he spoke, "I know you are upset with me but whatever the reason was there, I will just say, that was the only way to protect so many things."

Jiang Yang preferred to stay quiet and went back to his restroom, leaving these two alone. He knew there might be few things these both should talk out as he got to know the situations in the past.

Once Jiang Yang left, Lu Feng spoke again, "I am sorry Nicky. You can curse me that I couldn't do anything for you."

"When did I ask you to do anything for me?" finally she spoke but she sounded angry.

"I know, you never did but I always thought of you like my younger sister and after Xi Guo, I should have done something for you but..."

"Do you think I don't understand the situations and the difficulties everyone had?" she spoke stopping him from completing his part.

"No. I didn't mean it," he said.

"Then, did I ever expect anyone to come and help me? Did I ever go to anyone to beg for the help?" she said coldly, still facing her back to him.

"No." Lu Feng didn't know what to say to her, "You can scold me curse me. I am fine with it."

She turned to look at him and said while staring in his apologetic eyes with her cold ones "With what right should I do this? You are nobody to me. Everything ended up with the death of my brother."

“I deserve to hear this from you and I am ready to hear everything you will say.”

“But I don’t want to say anything to the stranger so I will take a leave now.” Saying it she turned around to open the door, but Lu Feng stopped her by pushing the door before she could open it.

Seeing him acting like this, she exclaimed, “What are you doing?”



# 315 Realising The Reality Of Her Life...

Nixxie exclaimed, "What are you doing?"

Placing his hand still on the door, Lu Feng replied, "I just want to talk to you and I want to apologize to you for not being able to do anything for you even though, I know my apology won't be enough for it."

"You are right so let me go and stay away from me. That is what you always did," she looked angry as well as hurt.

"Nicky, won't you forgive this brother?" He asked.

"I had only one brother and he is dead," she replied coldly as nothing from him was working on her cold and wounded heart.

He was ready to accept all the hatred from her and spoke, "I want to help you and this time I want to make everything right for you."

"No one can help me. If anyone will try to do anything, that person might end like my brother so stay away. I don't want to see anyone getting hurt because of me, so please....."

"Nothing will happen. This time I won't let you down like in the past. I will take you out of this," Lu Feng insisted.

"No. I don't want you to do anything now and I never even expected you to do anything for me in the past too." Suddenly she felt choked in her throat with the emotions she was feeling inside and said, "but... I.... just wanted you to come and visit me at least once in a while but you failed to do that. You called me little sister but you left me all alone so stop calling me sister and stop acting as if you care for me." she looked like on the verge of crying.

"I do but..." he didn't know how to explain it to her, "I was wrong. I am sorry."

“No, I won’t accept it.” Saying it tears started to roll down from her eyes. Lu Feng stood there to let her out everything.

“I was all alone after brother Xi Guo left. I was so young to understand things. I just wanted to see at least one person in whose eyes I could see care for me as my mother was struggling with her own pain. After elder brother, you were the only person I expected it from and only one to show up at least once, but you left me.” She was standing there while crying.

Lu Feng didn’t interrupt her.

“You left one young and miserable girl alone whose eyes were waiting for you to show up even by a mistake but you didn’t. I won’t ever forgive you, never.” Saying it she started to cry and sob, even more as if everything buried in her heart for so long was coming out at once.

Seeing her like this, Lu Feng stepped towards her and without a second thought, he hugged her. Nixxxie didn’t resist his hug and cried her heart out.

Jiang Yang was able to hear everything from inside as it was not a soundproof room. He felt bad for her. From the talk between three friends the previous night, Jiang Yang got to know about the relation between Lu Feng, Xi Guo, and Nixxxie.

For Lu Feng, she was like a younger sister and he too cared for her as much her own brother did, but after the death of Xi Guo, he had to leave her alone because of certain circumstances and he couldn’t help her.

Once she was calm, Lu Feng took her back to the Jiang Yang’s worktable and made her sit on the chair. Grabbing the box of tissue papers, he sat on another chair and passed her tissue papers to clean her face. He picked up a water bottle from the table and passed it to her after opening a lid.

She obediently did what he wanted her to. She wiped her face and teary eyes then had a sip of water. For a while, there was silence and no one talked.

Once she was calm, Lu Feng messaged Jiang Yang saying come out and receiving it, Jiang Yang did the same. Realizing

Jiang Yang's presence, Nixxie avoided looking at him as her eyes were swollen because of crying.

Jiang Yang sat in his chair and didn't ask what happened. Suddenly Nixxie spoke to look at Lu Feng, "Your sudden appearance in front of me made me realize the reality of my life which I almost forgot these few days. Thanks for reminding it to me and stopping me from doing a mistake."

Both looked at her to know why she was saying it suddenly.

Moving her sight from Lu Feng to Jiang Yang she said, "Thanks for the lunch Doctor Jiang Yang and there won't be any next time." Saying it she left without looking back, leaving both of them stunned.

Lu Feng understood the reason behind her such behavior and said while looking at Jiang Yang who was in a little shock with what she just said, "Let her be Jiang Yang. She has her own reasons."

"I know but just a while ago we were good but now.. suddenly..."

"I know what you are thinking but for now we should leave her alone."

"Hmm! As you say." Suddenly Jiang Yang's sight crossed the wet spot on Lu Feng's white shirt. Just above his chest. It was obvious to understand what was that but Jiang Yang didn't ask him anything and averted his sight.

Noticing it, Lu Feng spoke, "I always considered her as my younger sister just like Lu Lian and Lu Bao."

Jiang Yang smiled to hear it and said, "You don't have to explain it to me anything, Lu Feng. I know you well. I am happy that you are the one to be on her side." Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

Lu Feng was relieved to hear it but just then Jiang Yang spoke that made him frowned, "Moreover, I know, you won't ever look at anyone other than my sister, at least not for few more years."

Lu Feng sighed, “Won’t you ever stop talking bulls\*\*t?”

## 316 Meeting Song Meilin...

“Won’t you ever stop talking bulls\*\*t?” asked Lu Feng, giving out a deep sigh.

“Your love for my sister is not a bulls\*\*t. That little birdie is so lucky. Here we struggle to get love from a single person and she is the one blessed with the love from so many men around her.”

“Don’t call her like that. She doesn’t like it.” Lu Feng remembered, how much Jiang Yuyan cried when Jiang Yang called her little birdie, though she was drunk.

Hearing it, Jiang Yang sighed, “Man, was Lu Qiang was not enough that you too are going to her side?”

“I was always on her side and I always will be,” Lu Feng replied.

“Good for her.”

“Don’t worry. You will get the one soon too,” Lu Feng said.

Jiang Yang leaned back in the chair, thinking about something, “Looking at the scenario, I don’t think it’s possible this soon.”

“I know her and I can tell she likes you too.”

“That I know but the problem is her family and because of that she won’t ever accept it.” Jiang Yang was aware of her situation.

“Don’t worry when you have me and Lu Qiang with you.” “Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

“That is the only thing I am thankful about, having two morons just like me, in my life.” Both laughed about this.

“I am here to see her mother. How is she?” Lu Feng was asking about Song Meilin.

“She is fire but she is weak. It seems like, she is in a huge stress and going through a hard time.” Jiang Yang replied.

“Trying to protect her only child with all the possible way, isn't it hard enough for a mother who had already lost her one child before?”

“Hmm! Right!”

Lu Feng left to see Song Meilin while Jiang Yang was busy with his work after lunch.

Lu Feng knocked on the door. Upon getting permission to enter, he went inside.

“Lu Feng?” Song Meilin was surprised to see him while Nixxie had no expression on her face.

Lu Feng strode towards her and said, “Hmm! It's me. How are you, aunt Song Meilin?”

“I am good but how come you are here?” Song Meilin asked, still having those surprised expressions.

“To see you and I am sorry that I am late,” He replied.

She looked happy to see him, “I am glad to see you. It has been so long. How are you doing?” she asked.

“I am doing good.” He sat on the chair beside the table and continued, “I am here to apologize to both of you too.”

“For what, son?” Song Meilin always treated Lu Feng just like her own son Xi Guo.

“For not being able to help you out with anything and turning my back on you,” Lu Feng replied.

“You don't have to as I know what happened back then and what you did was the right thing to do.” Song Meilin replied and her words were surprising for Nixxie and she thought what happened in the past that Lu Feng had to go away from them.

In her heart, she was always thought, there must be something serious that he left them but never got to know what that was.

“Thank you so much for understanding it.” Lu Feng said.

“You are like my Xi Guo. I would like you to be out of the trouble always.” Mentioning the name of her son, her eyes

became moist with the memory of his unfortunate death.

“I know and now I want to act as your son too.”

“Huh?” she didn’t get what he meant.

“Nixxie is an adult now. She can take the business in her hand so before that bastard could do anything we should make a safe future for her.”

“I want it too but not with the cost of troubling others.”

“Do you trust me?” Lu Feng asked while looking into her eyes.

“I do but...”

“So rest assured.”

After talking for a while, Lu Feng left the room. While coming out of the room, he felt a sight on him from one the end of the corridor but he didn’t show that he noticed it and continued walking.

Once Lu Feng left the room, Nixxie went to her mother, “What happened in the past, mother? What both of you were talking about?”

As Nixxie was not a kid, Song Meilin preferred to inform her everything, “After your brother’s death, Lu Feng tried to help us but he too was very young and powerless in front of your evil stepbrother. At that time, because of the accident of his uncle, Lu Jinhai, Lu corporation was in a bad condition and Lu Qiang and Lu Feng both were almost powerless to do anything out of their reach.”

“Xi Cheng created trouble in Lu Corporation too by siding the major shareholders in the company on his side. Also, we had a doubt that in the accident of Lu Jinhai he was involved too. Lu Qiang was not a simple person to deal with though he was young, so he managed to get back at them but still, Xi Cheng was a threat.”

As Lu Feng was trying to help me, to stop him, Xi Cheng proposed him to stop in exchange for peace in Lu Corporation. Lu Feng was not worried about it as Lu Qiang was a capable person but Lu Jinhai was already in the hospital because of the

planning and plotting against him by their enemies and one of them was Xi Cheng so Lu Feng was worried about Lu Qiang's life too."

Nixxie was listening to her mother carefully.

"Those people didn't hesitate to harm the most powerful person like Lu Jinhai then Lu Qiang was nothing for them. For the sake of young Lu Qiang at that time, Lu Feng had to agree to Xi Cheng's wish. Moreover, I already created a shield for you with his help so he didn't have to worry about you much but he had to go away from us as it was the demand of Xi Cheng."

"And I thought how easily he abandoned us just like that," said Nixxie with regret of hating him all these years.

"He didn't. I am sure, he was keeping a watch on us through other ways. Also, he is not the same young Lu Feng from before and so many things have been changed so he doesn't have to be worried because of Xi Cheng.



## 317 Evil Intentions..

Nixxxie was regretting to misunderstand Lu Feng. It was not her fault as she didn't know the truth. Just like her brother, she liked Lu Feng a lot but at that time she was young and her affection towards him had a different meaning.

She had a crush on him just like other immature teenage girls of her age. For Lu Feng, she was like his sister but for her, it was the other way round. She used to think of him as her man. It was in the past when she was not matured enough but now things had been changed. For her, he was someone close to her and her brother, whom she admired as a nice person.

Once Lu Feng came out of the hospital and sat in his car, he dialed Lu Qiang's number. Lu Qiang was busy with an important meeting but the moment he saw Lu Feng's number flashing on his screen, he excused himself to receive the call.

Lu Qiang never excused himself from his meeting unless it's something very important and Lu Feng was among his most important things.

"Tell me." Lu Qiang asked.

"That bastard has his men in hospital. I just saw someone there." Lu Feng replied. He was referring to Xi Cheng.

"Nothing to be surprised about and till now he must have gotten the news of you being there."

"Hmm!" Lu Feng nodded.

"Don't worry; there is nothing to be worried about. He is just doing his part of keeping an eye on them as he is afraid of losing something and he doesn't want to do any mistake." Lu Qiang tried to make him understand.

"I know but I am worried that he might blackmail Nixxxie by using her sick mother. She is an adult now and she doesn't need to take her mother's consent to take any decision."

“I know what you mean and what you are worried about but don’t forget, her mother Song Meilin is not an ordinary woman. She must have planned something for this day.”

“I hope so too.”

Inside one of the luxurious offices of the Xi industries...

Xi Cheng was sitting in his black leather office chair behind his work table while looking at the man in a black suit, who was standing in front of him.

“Mr. Xi, everything was fine as usual but there was a slight change,” the man in a black suit said.

“I am listening,” Xi Cheng said while leaning back in his chair, with his hands resting on the hand rests.

He was one talented and average looking man, with the devil hidden inside him. He was a sweet talker sometimes to make his business deals work but when he was in his devious form he was the worst person to deal with, ruthless, emotionless with greed covering his mind.

With his black eyes hidden behind his gold rim glasses, he was staring at the man to get updates from the hospital. His black eyes had evil shadow in them and his black and neatly combed hair made him looked serious and scary but a good looking devil with a smirk on his lips. Xi Cheng was older than Xi Guo, Lu Qiang and Lu Feng. He was an experienced businessman.

The man in a black started to report, “Ms. Xi went to Doctor Jiang Yang’s cabin during lunchtime and there she spent time inside, more than required,”

Xi Cheng smirked, “Hmm! Interesting! It seems like the little girl has grown up now.”

The man standing there didn’t react to it and maintained his neutral expressions just as before. “Also, the member from Lu Family was there too.”

Hearing it, Xi Cheng was surprised a bit, “Lu Family?”

“Yes! The second son.....”

“Lu Feng?” before the man could complete his line Xi Cheng spoke.

Xi Cheng was aware that there was only one person from Lu Family who was close to the mother-daughter in the past and it was not surprising for him to hear it. As Song Meilin was in the hospital and she was in serious condition, it was given that he will go there by forgetting their deal in the past.

“Yes, and Ms. Xi was inside in the doctor Jiang Yang’s cabin with these two men for a while.” The man in the black suit spoke again.

“Lu Feng went to the doctor?” Xi Cheng asked.

“Yes, he first went to the doctor and later he went to see Mrs. XI,” The man replied.

“Hmm! That cold brat, Lu Feng personally went to the doctor? Who is that doctor exactly? Though he is treating one VIP patient, I never heard or see him.”

“He is new in China and most importantly he is the brother of President Lu’s fiancé.” The man replied. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

“Ohh! This is interesting now. Brother of Lu Qiang’s fiancé?” he had a mischievous smile on his face.

“Yes.”

Xi Cheng thought about something and spoke, “Lu Qiang’s fiancé? That bastard finally has someone. I heard she is a real beauty.”

“She is,” the man replied.

“Really? Need to see her personally then?”

“Not just that, the doctor is a childhood friend of both President Lu and Lu Feng.”

Hearing it, Xi Cheng remembered something, “Childhood friend? Why I feel like to hear this name somewhere, Jiang Yang? And what is the name of that girl?”

“Jiang Yuyan.” The man replied.

“Now I got it. In the past, I heard Xi Guo and Lu Feng talking about him and the girl,” remembering the things in the past, suddenly Xi Cheng laughed, “Haha! Now I remember. She is the childhood sweetheart of Lu Feng and Xi Guo used to tease him with her name, all the time.”

The man was listening to his boss silently, not knowing what he was talking about. Xi Cheng was laughing and talking to himself.

“The childhood sweetheart of Lu Feng is going to be his sister-in-law. How heartbreaking for the poor guy. He has nothing. No power and no love. Why I am suddenly feeling pity for him. I think I should help him.” talking to himself he looked at the man to give him instructions, “I need each and every information about all these people. Make it quick.”

“Yes sir,” saying the man left the office.

Rotating the paper wait on the table, Xi Guo spoke again with an evil smile on his face, “Time to get things more interesting.”

## 318 My Silly Daughter...

That day when before leaving the hospital, Jiang Yang went to see Song Meilin, Nixxie didn't look at him and left the room saying her mother that she is going to get fresh air. Jiang Yang didn't react to it and focused on his work.

Song Meilin sensed something was not right between her daughter and Jiang Yang. When Jiang Yang was doing his routine check-up on Song Meilin she asked, "Thanks for inviting Nicky for lunch."

Jiang Yang looked at her in surprise not knowing what to say.

Song Meilin continued, "I mean, she is like locked here with me and she couldn't go out as she wants to be by my side all the time. Having lunch with you was a bit change for her."

Jiang Yang came back to his senses, "It was nothing special as we had lunch in a small space in my cabin."

"Place doesn't matter but the company does, Isn't it," she asked with a ghost smile on her face.

Jiang Yang noticed Song Meilin was positive about him being with her daughter, "Well, I enjoyed the company but I am not sure about her."

"From what I see, I think she did but she doesn't want to show it." Song Meilin knew her daughter very well.

Jiang Yang smiled to hear it, "I hope so too."

Both were talking indirectly as knowing what was going in their minds. Song Meilin could see that Jiang Yang liked his daughter and Jiang Yang could see that Song Meilin had no problem of him being with his daughter.

Finishing his work, Jiang Yang left the room with a smile on his face while Song Meilin had the same reaction. She could guess why her daughter left the room when Jiang Yang entered the room, "My silly daughter."

When Jiang Yang was passing by the corridor, he saw Nixxie standing in the balcony at the other end of it. He stepped towards her but noticed a strange man around, looking at her and everywhere in the hospital.

He noticed that man since the day Song Meilin admitted to the hospital but he avoided it. Now knowing the condition in Xi family he could guess who that man must be.

Jiang Yang wanted to go to Nixxie and talk to her but this man was being an obstacle for him. He didn't want to create any trouble for her because of his actions. Instead of going to Nixxie, Jiang Yang took a turn in another way in the corridor and avoided the man.

He dialed Lu Feng's number. "Don't tell me you messed up with something," Lu Feng spoke the moment he answered the call.

"I wish but I can't right now," Jiang Yang replied.

"You moron, don't you dare do anything," Lu Feng exclaimed.

"haha! Don't worry, I am being a good boy these days."

"What happened then?" Lu Feng asked worriedly.

"Can her brother keep watch on her and her mother?" Jiang Yang asked.

"of course and he is doing it already. Look around and you will find a dog."

"I smelled of a dog that's why I called you."

"Be careful and don't go near to her when the dog is around. The owner of that dog has sharp teeth and strong claws"

"Are you expecting me to never talk to her as the dog is here, twenty-four by seven." "Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

"You are a doctor and that hospital is your place. You can find excuses to get your way done."

Jiang Yang's site fell on his assistant who came out of another ward after doing his job. Hearing Lu Feng's words, something

clicked in his mind and he said, “That I am going to do for sure. Just wait.” Saying it Jiang Yang cut the call and signaled his assistant to come to him.

“Yes, Doctor Jiang Yang?” the assistant asked.

“You see the man over there?” Jiang Yang said in a low voice while pointing towards the man standing in the corridor near the glass railing looking at the floor below.

“The one in a black suit?” The assistant asked.

“Yes. If you can take that man away from here for five minutes then I will reward you with assisting me in the next important surgery that you desperately wanted.”

“Really?” The face of an assistant shines brightly, hearing what Jiang Yang said.

“I never lie.”

“it’s done then.” Saying it the assistant went to the man without waiting for a single moment pretending it’s an emergency.

“Excuse me. it’s an emergency. Can you help me please?” The assistant said while panting heavily as showing he came running there hastily.

“What happened? The man asked.”

As it was a floor for only VIP patients, most of the time it looked deserted so it was easy to fool a person by asking for help.

Jiang Yang was observing them from afar with a smile on his face to see his assistant’s act, “Even my assistant is like me, a drama queen as Yuyan says.”

“One visitor of the patient suddenly fell unconscious and I need help as no one is here. I called for help but it will take time for the staff to come to this floor. Please come with me,” The act of assistant was totally believable as his acting was up to the mark and why not the reward was going to be what he wanted for so long.

That request the assistant doctor made was not of any sense as it was one of the best hospitals and staff was available everywhere being ready for any kind of emergency but being an outsider, that man fell for his trick and followed him.

The assistant took him to the other side of the floor to get as much as the time he could to keep the man away as instructed by Jiang Yang, Jiang Yang was observing everything while standing behind the wall of one of the passage. The moment that man and assistant disappeared from his sight, Jiang Yang strode towards Nixxie.

Realizing, someone was coming closer to her, Nixxie turned, but before she could react, Jiang Yang held her hand and said, "Come with me."



## 319 I Got My Answer...

“Stop. What are you doing?” Nixxxie exclaimed not knowing the reason for Jiang Yang’s sudden act.

“Don’t waste time as somehow I managed to get rid of a dog sent by your brother.” Saying it he pulled her towards the door nearby which led to the emergency exit stairs.

Hearing his word, Nixxxie obediently followed him as she too was aware of having the spy around, sent by her step-brother.

Once they reached the stairs behind the door, Jiang Yang let go of her hand and asked while looking into her eyes, “Why are you avoiding me?”

“I am not,” she replied staring back into his eyes.

Jiang Yang knew it was a lie. “Then why did you come out of the room when I entered inside.”

“It was not because of you. It was because I wanted to get fresh air,” she replied firmly as not giving up to his straight forward questions.

“What do you think? Am I an idiot?” He asked, to which Nixxxie didn’t know how to answer.

Jiang Yang continued, “Before, you used to wait for me every day to come to check on your mother and without blinking an eye, you used to keep staring at me then what changed now?”

Hearing it she startled, “W..When did I? I never.....”

“Shhh!” putting a finger on her lips, Jiang Yang stopped her from talking. “Lie to me but at least don’t lie to yourself.”

“You are mistaken.” She tried to defend herself.

“No, I am not. I even know whenever I came to the room at midnight, you always pretended to be asleep and when I kissed you.....”

“I was sleepy to understand what was happening or I would have never let you kiss me,” Nixxxie said before he could say

anything further that she didn't want to hear.

“Really?” saying it, Jiang Yang held her by shoulders and pinned her against the wall beside them. Before she could understand what he was doing, Jiang Yang's face was closer to hers and his lips were just an inch apart from hers.

Seeing him so close, Nixxie gulped and continued staring at him being unable to say a single word. Being so close, staring in each other's eyes both could feel each other's breath against their skin with their hearts beating faster. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

Nixxie wanted to speak but the way he was staring at her in her eyes with his intense gaze while moving his sight from her lips to her eyes, the words couldn't make their way out.

That playful, smiling and teasing Jiang Yang was nowhere to be seen. It was his other side that she was witnessing. Staring into her eyes intensely, Jiang Yang moved his lips closer, being ready to kiss her.

In a reflex, Nixxie closed her eyes involuntarily to let him kiss her like he had cast a spell on her by staring into her eyes. Jiang Yang looked at her face and observed her closely from her dense eyelashes, tiny nose, rosy pink lips, and her glowing skin.

Once he was done observing her, he moved back without kissing her. Realizing it, Nixxie opened her eyes just to see him standing away and staring at her.

She was embarrassed by her action that was contradictory to her previous statement that she won't let him kiss her. Before she could say anything or react, Jiang Yang spoke, “I got my answer” and left.

Nixxie continued looking at the door from where Jiang Yang left and realized her heart was beating faster. She didn't know what to do and how to face him later. She wanted to leave this place as soon as possible.

On the other side, the assistant reached the other end of the floor with the man in a black suit, but no one was there. The

assistant went back to his act, “Ohh! That man was here. Where has he gone?” and started to look around to search for the non-existing person with anxious expressions on his face.

The man in the suit too started to look around to search for someone but no one was there. The assistant checked the timing in his wristwatch and noticing the 10 minutes has been passed and said, “I think the staff I called for help must have taken care of it. Anyways, thank you so much for coming with me when it was an emergency. I hope that man is safe.”

“I hope so too,” Saying it the man in the black suit left to go back to his place to do his assigned work. The assistant doctor left too, having a smile on his face because of achieving what his senior doctor asked him to do. More than that he was happy for what he was going to get as a reward.

Jiang Yang went back to his cabin and sat in his chair, leaning back with his eyes closed. The view of her face which he observed closely started to play in front of his eyes and he still could remember the sweet smell of her perfume.

When he was closer to her, it was hard to stop himself from kissing her but he had to do that. Placing his left hand on his chest, he said, “What are you getting excited for? Calm down and slow down your speed. Your beats are buzzing in my ears.”

Once he was calm he left for the home though his heart wanted to stay and go back to her.

Nixxxie went back to the room but before she could enter inside she took a deep breath and had a little smile on her lips so that her mother won't be able to sense the turmoil inside her.

The moment Nixxxie entered inside, Song Meilin asked, “Are you feeling better now?”

Nixxxie was back in a room but her brain was still stuck at the memory from the staircase. She took the time to process what her mother asked and replied, “Y... Yes.. mom... I am feeling better now.” Saying it she lied down in a couch, looking like she was so exhausted.

## 320 Fierce Lu Qiang...

Seeing Nixxie tired, Song Meilin said, “Don’t worry, I will ask the doctor to give me discharge soon so that you won’t have to get suffocated here all the time. I know being in hospital for long time taking care of the patient is too tiring, right?”

With her eyes closed and one arm covering her eyes, she answered, “It’s not that mom. I am just... I don’t know what... I will be fine soon, don’t worry about me. You just take a rest.”

Song Meilin could understand Nixxie and felt bad that at such a young age her daughter had to go through a troublesome life instead of having a happy and cheerful one.

On the way back to the home, Jiang Yang didn’t wish to be alone so he called Lu Feng to give him company with the drinks. Lu Feng agreed and both went to one of the most luxurious pubs in the city where both went before on Jiang Yuyan’s birthday and spent time alone.

When Jiang Yang reached the pub, Lu Feng was yet to reach. He informed Jiang Yang he would be there in 10 minutes so Jiang Yang preferred to wait for him in the parking lot. While waiting for Lu Feng, suddenly Jiang Yang’s sight fell on the man coming with one bodyguard whose sight happened to meet with his.

Both recognized each other. That was Xi Cheng, Nixxie’s stepbrother. Seeing Jiang Yang he stepped towards him, “Ohh! Nice to see you here, doctor Jiang Yang.”

Jiang Yang smiled though he didn’t want to and before he could say anything a voice disturbed him, “But the same can’t be said about others.”

Jiang Yang recognized the voice and stayed still with a smile on his face while Xi Cheng looked at the source of a voice.

“Others are happy to see you here or not, you can’t be sure about it, isn’t it Xi Cheng?” Lu Feng spoke while coming in their direction.

“Calling me Xi Cheng instead of an elder brother?” Xi Cheng asked.

“I never had one and all those things ended up with the death of Xi Guo,” Lu Feng replied.

Hearing it, Xi Cheng smirked, “You are being bold huh? Seems like, you forgot the past. Should I remind it to you again?”

“This time it’s’ your turn to remember the things clearly and keep it in your rotten brain for ever.” Lu Feng replied calmly not being affected by the indirect warning of Xi Cheng.

Jiang Yang stayed silent as he didn’t have to do anything when the smart man Lu Feng was there.

“Is it the effect of Lu Qiang’s power? Should I take away the source of your bold behavior this time as last time that was the source of your happiness?” This time Xi Cheng tried to hit the weak spot of Lu Feng but it didn’t affect him.

Lu Feng was aware of there was no use of showing his weakness to him and said, “Don’t you dare to anything or you will end up with nothing.”

“Really? Then I will prefer to end with the most precious thing for you guys. What’s her name again? Jiang Yu...”

Hearing it, Lu Feng and Jiang Yang both had clenched their fists, being ready to him as they understood what Xi Cheng was talking about. They were aware that till now, he must have got information about all of them.

Before these could take a step ahead and do anything, Xi Cheng was lying on the ground after a sound of someone punched him hard. It was so sudden that no one could understand what had happened. Even the bodyguard couldn’t see who came and hit his boss.

Seeing his boss lying in a ground in a pain while holding his jaw, the bodyguard strode towards the man who came

suddenly but before that Lu Feng stopped him and kicked him hard to make him fall away near the pillar in the parking.

“What did you just say from your trashy mouth?” That was Lu Qiang who looked dangerous with his eyes filled with a rage. He stepped near Xi Cheng who was lying on the ground and placing his feet on his chest, Lu Qiang spoke, “You scum, don’t you dare to take her name. Seems like you forgot your place.”

Xi Cheng couldn’t resist what Lu Qiang was doing to him. His eyes showed that he was scared of Lu Qiang. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

“Tomorrow in the news, do you want to see half of your company going out of your hand?” Lu Qiang said again.

“I was trying to mess with Lu Feng as I think of him as my younger brother, Lu Qiang, don’t take it too seriously.” Xi Cheng had a fake smile on his face and he looked calm though from inside he was a bit scared.

“Just to maintain a peace in the business world, I restrained myself and letting a trash like you to survive here, but it doesn’t mean I can’t throw you back in a trash can. So always keep in your mind where you exactly belong.”

“I will. Now will you take your feet off from me?” Xi Cheng could see the anger raging inside Lu Qiang.

In the past, Xi Cheng had faced the fierce side of Lu Qiang which he never showed in a few years and he didn’t wish to see it again.

Lu Feng was aware of Lu Qiang’s dangerous sight so it was not surprising for him to see Lu Qiang like this but Jiang Yang was stunned to see him like this. He knew Lu Qiang was dangerous but he was stunned to witness it personally. The person like Xi Cheng was scared of him, that means there was more to his personality.

Lu Qiang retreated his foot and stepped back to let Xi Cheng go. Xi Cheng stood up and made a way to let these three people go. Suddenly Lu Qiang stopped and turned, “I spared

your company because it belongs to someone else and if you ever try to do anything with that person, I will make sure, you will rot in hell.”

## 321 Drinking And Discussing...

Xi Cheng was utterly humiliated but he couldn't say or do anything at the moment and swallowed his anger seeing the retreating back of Lu Qiang. "I will make sure to make up for all the humiliation I got from you till now and that day would be the last day of your life, Lu Qiang." Xi Cheng's eyes were red with all the anger inside him.

The bodyguard came to him though he himself was in a pain, "Are you all right boss?"

Xi Cheng looked at the bodyguard with his gaze filled with anger and slapped him hard, "Useless!" saying it he sat in the car and the bodyguard followed him.

When these three friends reached inside the pub, as usual, they went to the private room booked on Lu Feng's name always. Sitting inside the room, they could see what was going out in the pub as it was upstairs and had glass partition walls.

Drinks came for them and as usual Lu Feng restrained Lu Feng from drinking much, "It's not for you Lu Qiang."

Lu Qiang sighed, "Do you always need to remind me that I have a low alcohol tolerance?"

"I don't mind to let you drink but I am worried after drinking you will trouble someone and that you won't want. Moreover, when you will wake up the next morning, you will curse both of us for not stopping you from getting drunk," Lu Feng replied to which Jiang Yang said, "Agreed! Well I don't mind you to go and trouble my sister but I will kick on your butt if you cursed us after that."

"Okay! I won't drink," saying it Lu Qiang checked his cell phone as he got a message on it.

Lu Feng passed a glass of soft drink to Lu Qiang, "This is for you,"



Seeing a soft drink, Lu Qiang gave him a look.

“What?” Lu Feng asked to notice his unpleasant expressions.

Lu Qiang shook his head as saying ‘nothing’ and obediently accepted what Lu Feng offered him,

“How did you come here suddenly, Lu Qiang?” Jiang Yang asked.

“I called him here when you asked me to give you company on drinks.” Lu Feng answered.

“You did well as he was useful to deal with one bastard,” Jiang Yang said.

Getting the glass the table, Lu Feng said, “He is very useful, Jiang Yang, You don’t know about the real Lu Qiang, yet.”

“Hmm! I can guess that after seeing Xi Cheng scared of Lu Qiang.” Saying it Jiang Yang looked Lu Qiang who was busy with his cell phone.

“Now tell us what happened?” Lu Feng asked as he was sure something must have happened that Jiang Yang called him.

Hearing it Lu Qiang too looked at Jiang Yang to know what happened.

Getting his glass from the table, Jiang Yang sipped and answered, “What can happen? I am going through what Lu Qiang had gone through while trying to get my sister.” Moving his sight from his glass to Lu Qiang he spoke again, “Now I feel you, man.”

Lu Qiang smiled to it, “You have yet to go through so many things, it’s just a start. Her evil brother yet to step between you and her.”

“Yeah right!” Agreeing to it, Jiang Yang spoke again, “Lu Qiang!”

“Huh?” Lu Qiang looked at him.

“You should be thankful that your woman has a brother who is as good as an angel,” Jiang Yang replied.

“Right. Just need to put that white fur circular thing on your head so that it will make you look like one.”

Hearing it Lu Feng laughed and asked again. “Now tell us clearly what happened, Jiang Yang.”

Jiang Yang narrated the incident from Nixxie leaving the room as he entered and then what happened on the emergency exit staircase.

Hearing the whole incident, Lu Feng and Lu Qiang both smiled.

“If it was in case of Lu Qiang and Yuyan, I bet, Lu Qiang would have ended up kissing Yuyan till she suffocates,” said Lu Feng to tease Lu Qiang.

“You are right as I can’t stop myself whenever I am so close to her.” Lu Qiang replied. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

“You can learn from him, Jiang Yang.” Lu Feng was in a mood to tease Jiang Yang.

“Well, stopping myself from kissing her was not that easy. I almost kissed her but stopped at the last moment as it was the right thing to do.” Jiang Yang was serious and different from his funny self.

“We understand you. Give her some time and I know she will come to you. Right now she is scared.” Lu Feng said to which Lu Qiang agreed too.

“I know.” Jiang Yang was aware of her condition too

“But it won’t be for a long time. I am just waiting for Song Meilin to come to me for help.” Suddenly Lu Qiang spoke and Jiang Yang looked at him.

Jiang Yang thought about something and asked, “Why? Is it because that Xi Cheng is scared of you so much? What you exactly did before to make him scared of you?”

Lu Feng was aware of everything so he sat lazily on the couch while enjoying his drink while leaving these two to discuss the

things from the past. Lu Qiang preferred to explain everything to Jiang Yang because of Nixxie.

“In the past when I was taking control of Lu Corporation after the accident of my father, he was a trouble maker and he planned so many things against Lu Corporation with Zhang Wei. To stop him, I had to get down to his level and I had to plan some dirty tricks to get him under me.”

Swirling a glass in his hand and taking a pause he spoke again, “And once you stepped into mud, you end up getting dirt on yourself too.”

“You did well, Lu Qiang. That time you were the only hope and what you did was necessary,” Lu Feng said to which Lu Qiang nodded and continued.

“I have so many things against him in my hands that can damage him but thinking about Song Meilin and her request to me, I had to stop.”

“Nixxie’s mother? she stopped you?” Jiang Yang was surprised to hear what Lu Qiang said.

## 322 Song Meilin's Plan...

“I had so many things against Xi Cheng in my hands, those could have destroyed him but thinking about Song Meilin and her request to me, I had to stop.”

“Nixxie's mother? She stopped you?” Jiang Yang was surprised to hear it.

“Yes! Song Meilin, Nixxie's mother. At that time there were few things that I had to stop doing because it would have affected the Xi family's business. She didn't care about Xi Cheng but that business under Xi family is all the hard work of Song Meilin's father and she wanted to protect it in all the way possible.”

“Anyways at that time Nixxie was a kid so Song Meilin was waiting for the day when her daughter would be of the age to handle everything and for her, Xi Cheng was just a toy to handle that business. She knew though Xi Cheng was greedy for power, he is the one who can handle it perfectly and one day she will take all that back from him, leaving him with nothing as the revenge for her son's death.”

“Hmm! That makes sense. Use your enemy for your benefit and then get rid of him,” Jiang Yang said.

Lu Feng agreed, “But it is like a torture to see the murderer of your child in front of your eyes every day, living a happy life. Song Meilin is one strong woman. Xi Guo's death shook her but couldn't break her.”

Lu Qiang agreed, “Right! and continued, “That was not the only reason for me to stop. I had my own reasons too and I had to let him off or there would be something that could have shaken few families and it would be worse.”

“I just scared Xi Cheng saying him to behave. As he knew I can destroy him, he doesn't try to pull a stunt with me. Still, I am sure he must be planning something behind my back and searching for my weakness.”

“Don’t you have any? From what I see, you have so many weaknesses now,” Jiang Yang asked

“I have but now I know how to protect them.” Lu Qiang answered.

“Lu Qiang is right, Jiang Yang. He is the most powerful person here and it’s not without any reason. So rest assured.” Saying it Lu Feng once again filled his glass which he emptied out while listening to the conversation between his two friends.

“Hmm! I just hope that Nixxxie should be out of the trouble and leave her life peacefully,” Jiang Yang said and emptied out his glass in one shot being ready to fill it again.

“She will, soon. Trust me. Her time is around now just need to settle few things with that bastard.” Lu Qiang assured him.

“Glad to know it.” After discussing and taking out the things from their hearts these three were relaxed being unaware that somewhere someone was going to create trouble for them.

After getting humiliated by Lu Qiang, Xi Cheng went to another place, a famous hotel in the city, in one of the private room of the restaurant where someone was waiting for him.

“Welcome Xi Cheng,” A man welcomed him.

“After so long Zhang Wei, my partner in crime” Xi Chang called him by his name even if Zhang Wei was elder to him. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

Pointing towards the seat opposite him, Zhang Wei said, “Have a seat. I am here to talk about our venture in country S,”

“Only that? I doubt though.” Xi Cheng had a sly smile on his face.

“What more it could be between two businessmen, Xi Cheng?” Zhang Wei tried to avoid his curious thoughts.

“Hmm! Right, but what is there to talk about that project? It is running successfully as Lu Corporation stepped back from it in

the past and I don't think they will ever enter there," Xi Cheng said.

"I still wonder why Lu Corporation stepped back," Zhang Wei asked.

"It was a decision of Lu Qiang and the reason was my unfortunate stepmother, Song Meilin," Xi Cheng answered.

"Song Meilin?" Zhang Wei asked curiously.

"Yes, she was the one to ask him not to take any action against me and let me run the business."

Hearing it, Zhang Wei was surprised, "But why?"

Giving out a deep sigh, Xi Cheng answered calmly, not getting anxious about what might happen with him. "I am the tool for her to run her business until her daughter becomes independent. Now her daughter is independent she will try to dethrone me and for that, she will get the help of Lu Qiang,"

"You are in trouble then."

"Not completely as long as I can get rid of Lu Qiang." There was something in Xi Cheng's eyes that showed he had something planned and that was not going to be good news for anyone.

"It's not that easy as you know what kind of a power he holds. It's not easy to get him out from the business world"

Looking at Zhang Wei having an evil smile on his face and the darkness in his eyes which could not be hidden even behind his gold rim glasses, he said, "Who is talking about the business world?"

Sensing what Xi Cheng meant, Zhang Wei replied, "Don't you try to do the same what you did with your brother? In this, I am not with you. Keep that in your mind."

"You were like not this in the past. Do I have to remind you about one accident in the past?" Xi Cheng asked with his one eyebrow curved up.

It was in the past Xi Cheng but now I don't want to harm anyone. If you want to dethrone him from the Lu Corporation,

I am always with you. I want to do something for someone dear to me.”

“Hmm! Someone dear to you. Ming Rusheng? If I am not wrong?” Xi Cheng asked knowing, Ming Rusheng was everything for Zhang Wei.

“You don’t need to know about it.” Zhang Wei didn’t want to drag Ming Rusheng in their dirty business so he avoided mentioning him.

## 323 Drunk And Drama..

Seeing Zhang Wei being protective of Ming Rusheng, Xi Cheng spoke, “He is one talented man. Why don’t you bring him with you next time?”

“Stay away from him.” Zhang Wei was serious so Xi Cheng didn’t drag it.

“Okay! But as you said, It’s not easy to take Lu Qiang down, so to make it easy we will need the help of someone from Lu family.”

“From his family? It’s impossible but we can plant a spy in Lu Corporation.” Zhang Wei suggested.

“Spy? Haha! We will find that spy’s dead body the next day. Don’t you know him?” Xi Cheng was the one who was familiar with the abilities that Lu Qiang had.

Zhang Wei gave out a deep sigh and spoke, “Hmm! Lu Qiang is very difficult to deal with.”

“Don’t worry, I have already planned something and decided who is the one from Lu family that will help us. It’s just that I need to try hard to get him on our side.”

“There is no way that someone from the Lu family will come to our side.”

Xi Chen smiled slyly, “Zhang Wei, never forget, there are two things in the world that can make a person lose his mind. One is greed of power and money and the other one is a woman. Either one of them can work but the person who needs both is the toxic one.”

“Huh?” Zhang Wei looked at him as to know what he exactly planned.

“It’s simple, Zhang Wei. Look at both of us. I lost my mind for money and the power and you lost yours for a woman. So we just need someone like us,” Xi Cheng replied while swirling a glass of wine in his hand.



“Who is that one, you are aiming for?” Zhang Wei was curious as Xi Cheng looked sure about his plan and the person he was going to look for.

“You will get to know about it soon.” Xi Cheng had an evil grin on his face.

At Jiang Residence...

Lu Qiang brought back drunk Lu Feng and Jiang Yang back somehow to Jiang residence. Jiang Yuyan was not surprised to see them both drunk but she was glad to see Lu Qiang all sober and fine.

“I was expecting to see this when brother Yang called me and said he was going to be with both of you and he will be back late,” Jiang Yuyan said while letting them inside the residence.

Lu Qiang was holding both of them on either side while standing between them. They were drunk but could walk properly at least so it made it easy to bring them back. Lu Qiang dragged them to the sofa and threw them into it not worrying about where they will fall. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

He looked exhausted with all the efforts he put to bring them back and sat on the sofa exhaling out through the mouth. Jiang Yuyan went to the kitchen to bring water for him.

Jiang Yang was whining with the way how Lu Qiang threw them. “You devil man. You threw us like this. Don’t you know how much it hurt? My heart is already hurt because of her and now you are trying to hurt me,” Jiang Yang said who was lying half in a couch and half on the floor.

Lu Feng was drunk but he too didn’t like the way Lu Qiang threw both them on the sofa and complained, “He is right Lu Qiang. How can you throw us like we are nothing?”

“I treated both of you very nicely as much as can or I had a plan to throw both of you in the huge trash cans on the roadside. So you better behave or I will take both of you back there.” Lu Qiang was even stubborn to fall for their whining.

Jiang Yang tried to get on the sofa but his feet gave up so he sat on the floor while resting his back to the sofa. “See, I told you, Lu Feng, he is a devil. He had heart only for my sister.”

Just then Jiang Yuyan came back with a glass of water in her hands and passed it to Lu Qiang. He drank water while Jiang Yuyan sat beside him to see the drama of these two drunken men.

Lu Feng was already on the floor. Seeing Jiang Yang sitting down on the floor, he shifted towards him and sat beside while resting his back to the sofa. “I know really. He doesn’t care about me, his own brother. Though I am a few months older to him, he treats me like a younger one.”

“I know, my poor darling.” Saying it Jiang Yang patted Lu Feng’s head like he was a teenage girl who was upset with his brother and said, “Take a charge. Treat him like a younger brother and order him right now.”

Lu Feng nodded and looked at Lu Qiang who was sitting in the one corner of the sofa. “Lu Qiang, go and bring water for us right now.”

Lu Qiang looked at him with his one eyebrow raised so Lu Feng spoke again, “Why are you giving me a look. I am elder to you so go and bring water. Also, make sure it should be chilled.”

Lu Qiang didn’t argue and went to the kitchen asking Jiang Yuyan to wait for him. She sat calmly waiting to see what’s gonna happen now.

Pulling out a water bottle from the fridge, Lu Qiang emptied out water in a glass and took it to the living room.

Seeing Lu Qiang holding a glass, Lu Feng smiled and said to Jiang Yang, “See, how obedient he is!” Jiang Yang nodded and said, “You should always treat him like this. He is a devil.” Lu Feng agreed, “Right. Just see now.”

“Hey Lu Qiang, br..n..g..unm.. damn...” Before Lu Feng could complete his line, Lu Qiang threw chilled water on his face and remaining he threw on Jiang Yang’s face.”

# 324 I Won't Fall Down When You Are Here...

Hey Lu Qiang, br..n..g..unm.. damn...” Before Lu Feng could complete his line, Lu Qiang threw chilled water on his face and remaining he threw on Jiang Yang’s face.”

“What the heck!” Both exclaimed, startled by the unexpected action of Lu Qiang

“Both of you wanted water so here it is.” Lu Qiang said.

“Is this the way?” Jiang Yang asked.

“Both of you didn’t explain how?” saying it Lu Qiang put the glass on the center table and sat beside Jiang.

Lu Qiang didn’t throw much water on them as not wanting them to drench in it. Jiang Yuyan was smiling ear to ear seeing these three and didn’t meddle in between them.

“Go upstairs and sleep quietly or I will bring a bucket full of chilled water.” Lu Qiang ordered them in a firm voice not feeling guilty about what he did with both of them.

Both got up obediently and headed to go upstairs by balancing themselves and supporting each other.

Sitting on a sofa, Lu Qiang said to Jiang Yuyan, “Just sit here for a while. The way both are walking, it will take them ages to reach upstairs”

Both sat in a place looking at the two drunk men trying to make their way upstairs. Jiang Yuyan couldn’t hold back her laughter, “Haha! You know how to get hold of these two.”

Lu Qiang just smiled and asked, “What you did today.” It was time for him to spend it with his love. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

Once both drunken men reached upstairs and these love birds are done with their talk, they went upstairs to Jiang Yuyan's room, where a surprise was waiting for them. As they entered inside, they saw, Jiang Yang and Lu Feng both were lying in Jiang Yuyan's bed.

Lu Qiang sighed and said, "These morons" while Jiang Yuyan smiled and said, "Both are so adorable together when they are drunk."

When Lu Qiang and Jiang Yuyan were busy in their talk, they didn't pay attention, where these both were heading to. When they reached upstairs, Jiang Yang asked turned to his right while Lu Feng turned the left to Jiang Yang's room.

"Where are you going?" Jiang Yang asked.

"I am going to your room," Lu Feng answered.

"My room is on the left side, you dummy." Jiang Yang was so drunk to see which one was his left and turned to his right.

"But isn't that right side." Lu Feng asked as he still could guess the sides.

"I think you are drunk. Come with me. This is the right side." Saying it both went to Jiang Yuyan's room while losing their balance and holding each other to not fall down.

Entered inside the room, Lu Feng asked while looking around, "Why your room is girly?"

Jiang Yang smiled and replied still being unaware that they entered the wrong room, "It's for my Nixxie."

Both went to the bed and lied down on it lazily. Lu Feng turned in the bed and slept on his stomach. The moment he realized a familiar scent in a mattress and a bedsheet, he sniffed deeply and said, "So sweet smell. It's too familiar. Why your bed smells like Yuyan?" saying it he sniffed again.

Jiang Yang laughed to hear it and replied, "Man, you are so in love with my sister that everywhere you see her."

"Hmm! You are right." Lu Feng agreed and started to caress the mattress with a love.

Jiang Yang was lying on his back. Turning his head to look at Lu Feng he asked, "You still love her right and it hurts to see she can't be with you."

"Hmm!" Lu Feng nodded and continued caressing a mattress gently.

"I feel you, my friend. I really do," Jiang Yang spoke again.

Lu Feng didn't reply and continued what he was doing but this time suddenly tears rolled down from his eyes.

Seeing it, Jiang Yang moved towards him to hug him. Just then Lu Qiang and Jiang Yuyan entered the room. Lu Qiang frowned while Jiang Yuyan found them adorable.

Stepping towards them, Lu Qiang said, "What both of you are doing here?"

Hearing these words, Jiang Yang let go of Lu Feng and turned to look at Lu Qiang. "This is my room. You go to Yuyan's room. Can't you see my darling is crying?"

Lu Qiang looked at Lu Feng who was caressing a mattress and tears were visible in his eyes. He felt bad for him and stood frozen at his place. Suddenly Lu Feng spoke, "If he says it's Yuyan's room then it is because my brother can't be wrong." Saying he got up from the bed trying to make himself stand comfortably to be able to walk.

Jiang Yang too stood up and followed Lu Feng. "I will go with my darling" but he lost his balance and Lu Qiang had to hold him. He took Jiang Yang towards the door while Lu Feng was following him with his uneven and shaking steps.

Jiang Yuyan was standing near the door. The moment Lu Feng reached the door, he missed a step and he was about to fall down but Jiang Yuyan held him. Lu Feng stood up properly with her support while almost hugging her with his chin resting on her shoulder.

"Don't fall down." She said.

Seeing Lu Feng missed his step and about to fall down, Lu Qiang stopped but felt relieved to see Jiang Yuyan supporting

him. He was about to say something just then Lu Feng spoke, "I won't fall down when you are here to handle me."

Lu Qiang stayed silent and Jiang Yuyan couldn't understand what he exactly meant and let him stand taking her support. Lu Feng moved his head back from her shoulder to look into her eyes with his hazy ones and said, "Yuyan...I..."

Lu Feng's words were broken but Lu Qiang understood what he was going to say. He didn't stop him and instead waited for him to say it to Jiang Yuyan.

## 325 I Am A Fool Yuyan...

Lu Feng's words were broken but Lu Qiang understood what he was going to say. He didn't stop him and instead waited for him to say it.

Jiang Yang looked at Lu Feng with his heavy eyes not knowing what he was up to and said, "Make it fast Lu Feng. My legs are hurting now."

Lu Feng was still staring in Jiang Yuyan's eyes and Jiang Yuyan was waiting for him to speak while looking back at him.

Taking support to stand by holding her by her both shoulder, he tried to speak again, looking into her eyes, "Yuyan...I..." He stopped as the words were choked in his throat and laughed mildly. The way he laughed, it looked a painful as he was laughing at himself. His eyes were moist with tears he shade while lying in her bed.

Jiang Yuyan thought it was the effect of alcohol on him so she let him do what he wanted and supported him to stand properly.

Lu Feng stopped laughing as realizing something and continued, "I...am...a fool, Yuyan. I...am sorry." Saying it he let go of her and turned to leave the room while taking the support of the door. Lu Qiang was standing there and held him to support him.

Lu Feng was still not able to walk properly so Jiang Yuyan held him for support as Lu Qiang was busy with Jiang Yang. Seeing her helping Lu Feng, he asked, "Will you be able to bring him to the room?"

Jiang Yuyan nodded and Lu Qiang left Lu Feng to her. Feeling bad for his brother, Lu Qiang carried Jiang Yang to his room and Jiang Yuyan followed them with Lu Feng holding him by his waist and his one hand circled around her shoulder.

Lu Qiang made sure to put both these guys to sleep comfortably in the bed. As he started to remove Jiang Yang's shoes, Jiang Yuyan too removed Lu Feng's shoes. Once she was done Lu Qiang looked at her and said, "Thank you."

Jiang Yuyan looked at him and asked, "For what? He is someone to me too. Before he was a friend but now he is your brother and related to me."

Lu Qiang nodded agreeing to what she said and sat beside Lu Feng while patting his head and running his fingers through his hair to caress him. Lu Qiang was still feeling bad for him.

When Lu Feng was almost about to confess his love to Jiang Yuyan, he didn't stop him and preferred to let him out what was in his heart. It was Lu Qiang's trust in him knowing that he won't ever have bad intentions about Jiang Yuyan in his mind and he would always think about her happiness first.

It was sad that both brothers desired the same woman but there was no way that both could be happy at the same time. Lu Qiang could only hope for him to find his happiness in the future.

Making sure, both were comfortable in a bed, Lu Qiang turned off the lights in the room and left with Jiang Yuyan to her room. When they reached the room, Lu Qiang freshened up and Jiang Yuyan passed him a night pajama of her brother to change into it.

All this while, Jiang Yuyan was observing Lu Qiang as she didn't fail to notice seriousness on his face. He was silent and didn't talk a single word. Once they were in a bed, sleeping side by side, Lu Qiang was staring at the ceiling. Jiang Yuyan shifted towards him to place her head on his shoulder and her hand surrounding his chest. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

Looking at his face that looked calm but immersed in various thoughts, she asked, "Are you worried about Lu Feng?"

The way Lu Qiang sat beside Lu Feng, caressing his head, having worried expressions on his face, Jiang Yuyan



understood all this time he was thinking about Lu Feng.

“Huh?” Hearing her, he came out of his thoughts and nodded,  
“Hmm!”

“Is there something to be worried about?” she asked again.

“No! I just want him to be happy always and to get what he always desired for but...” He stopped while giving out a deep sigh.

“But what?”

“I think, I am the one who is always in between him and what he wants,” Lu Qiang replied sadly.

“Why are you saying this suddenly? I don’t think it’s the truth.”

“He always wanted to lead Lu Corporation but suddenly he left everything to me and never came back there,” he said.

“Hmm! I know.”

Staring at the ceiling he spoke again, “He desired for something else and I am in his way again.”

“And what’s that?” Jiang Yuyan asked curiously.

“I can’t tell you. It’s up to him if he wants to tell about it to someone.” Lu Qiang didn’t want to tell her about Lu Feng’s feelings about her or it would have made the situation difficult for her and Lu Feng. Moreover, it was Lu Feng’s right to tell her about it so he preferred not to tell her.

“I can understand. It’s okay.” Jiang Yuyan too didn’t ask again as knowing, if it was something she should know then Lu Qiang had told her without even asking for it.

“Thanks for understanding.”

Jiang Yuyan smiled and pecked on his lips, “Don’t think too much and sleep now. It’s already late.”

Kissing on her forehead, Lu Qiang nodded and both slept while cuddling each other.

The next day in the hospital, Jiang Yang didn’t go on his round to check and instead he sent the assistant doctor to check on

his all the patients. He was busy going through the reports of Song Meilin and other patients to make few important decisions for them.

Seeing the other doctor, Song Meilin asked, “Is Doctor Jiang Yang again busy in surgery today?”

“No. today he doesn’t have any surgery lined up. He is in his cabin doing some important work,” The doctor answered.

## 326 Can We Be Friends?

Hearing it Nixxie thought, he didn't come because of her and she was angry that how could he ignore her mother just because of the problems between them.

Song Meilin noticed her daughter's expressions and thought she was upset because Jiang Yang didn't come and smiled not knowing what exactly was going in her daughter's mind and said, "Why don't you go and ask doctor Jiang Yang that when they are going to discharge me?"

"They will mom. They won't keep you here without any reason so no need for me to go there and ask personally." She replied.

"I know but I don't want to be here now. I want to go home so please go and ask doctor Jiang Yang when can we go home." Song Meilin insisted.

"Mom...."

"I won't listen to anything." Saying it, Song Meilin closed her eyes.

Frowning at her mother's wish, Nixxie got up from the couch and left the room to go to Jiang Yang's cabin. When she reached there, she stopped outside and inhaling deeply she knocked on the door.

Hearing permission to get inside, she opened the door and looked at Jiang Yang who was busy going through the reports.

This time again, without looking at the door to see who the person was, Jiang yang welcomed her, "Have a seat Nixxie."

For a moment she forgot why she was there and continued staring at him, observing how handsome he looked while doing his work seriously. She stood frozen looking at him and the incident from the staircase flashed in her mind.

For a moment she was into that memory and could feel how she felt when he was so close to her. she remembered the way

he stared into her eyes so closely and his hot, mint breath touching her skin.

When she was busy in her own world of memories, Jiang Yang looked at her, and said, “Do you want to stand and talk?”

Hearing it she came back to her senses and shook her head. Sitting down in a chair, she said, “I am here to ask when my mother is going to get a discharge?”

Jiang Yang was resumed his work of going through the reports and those were of Song Meilin’s reports. Without looking at her, he asked, “Are you in that hurry to leave this hospital. I was thinking to keep your mother here for a few more days so that we can spend some time together?”

Nixxie frowned to hear it and said, “I am not in a mood of joking around with you.”

“I am serious. Who said I am joking.” He replied.

“I am not here to listen to these things from you. I came just because my mother sent me over here to ask you about her discharge time.” She behaved as she was not affected by his words though she was shaken from inside.

Giving out a deep sigh, Jiang Yang looked at her and said with a serious expression on his face as he was back in his doctor mode, “I am going through your mother’s reports and....”

“And what?” Before he could talk further, she interrupted him looking at him anxiously.

“Don’t be so afraid. There is nothing to be worried about. Her reports are normal.” Jiang Yang tried to ease her tension.

“That’s good,” she said but her expressions were the same.

“Wouldn’t you be happy now to hear it?” Jiang Yang asked to see her puzzled face.

She was happy but at the same time, her mind was surrounded by so many things, that were going to happen when she and her mother would be home.

“Of course I am. You don’t know what I.....” she stopped controlling her excitement, realizing she should not talk much.

She didn't realize how she continued talking like he was someone closer to her and she knew him for since long. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

Seeing her stopped suddenly, he said while staring in her eyes, "I want to know what you are feeling now." Jiang Yang asked where she stopped.

Nixxie didn't know how to respond to this and tried to speak, "I am very happy that my mother is fine now. What more I could wish for."

"Hmm! This is not the way you were talking a moment before. You were talking like I am your friend," He said.

"I just got carried away with the happiness of mother being all fine now," she replied.

"I see," Jiang Yang said with a little nod.

She continued, "So when can we go back to our home?"

"Tomorrow," He replied.

"Huh?" Nixxie didn't expect it to be this soon.

Seeing her questioning sight, Jiang Yang asked, "Why? You want to go today?"

"Nono! it's fine," saying it she stood up from her chair and said, "Thank you so much doctor, Jiang Yang."

Not waiting for his reply she turned to leave. Jiang Yang leaned back in his chair and called her, "Nixxie!"

She turned around to look at him, "Hmm?"

"Can't we be friends and see each other even after you leave the hospital?" he asked.

Nixxie was startled with this unexpected question and stood there thinking about what to reply, Yes or No.

Before she could decide Jiang Yang said again. "Don't answer me right now. Take your time, I will be waiting."

Jiang Yang was sure she wanted to say 'Yes' but she will definitely say 'No' and the reason for her 'No' was known to

him, her family.

Nixxie nodded and left the cabin. When she reached the room, Song Meilin asked, “What did the doctor say?”

Sitting on a couch with a calm expression on her face, she replied, “He said that all reports are normal and we can go back home tomorrow.”

“That’s good news.” Song Meilin said.

Nixxie nodded, “Hmm! It is.”

Song Meilin was observing the reaction of her daughter but there was no change. She looked normal as not feeling bad about going away from Jiang Yang. so to make it sure she tried again.

## 327 She Is Already My Wife...

Song Meilin was observing the reaction of her daughter but there was no change. Nixxie looked normal as not feeling bad about going away from Jiang Yang so to make it sure Song Meilin tried again.

“You must be even more happy as you were bored staying here and it was annoying to be in the hospital for so many days. Going to the doctor, again and again, to take updates about me and waiting for him to come here to check me then wait for what he will say about the improvement. Waiting for the tests and their results. It was all so troublesome. Also, for my sake, you have to go for lunch with the doctor and you....”

Suddenly Nixxie spoke interrupting her mother, “Not at all, mom. Doctor Jiang Yang is a nice person and he always answered me patiently. That lunch was nice too.”

When her mother was going through the list of things, Nixxie just caught the things about Jiang Yang and couldn't help but praise him. Moreover, when she talked about him, there was brightness in her eyes that her mother didn't feel to notice.

“I see,” Song Meilin said with the slight smile on her face.

Noticing the way her mother was looking and smiling at her, Nixxie startled and realized she got carried away. “Cough-Cough! I mean he is really a good doctor and because of him my mother is well now so I should be thankful to him.”

“Hmm! You should.” Song Meilin nodded.

In the evening, Lu Qiang arrived at Lu mansion with Jiang Yuyan. After their engagement, it was the first time, when Jiang returned to Lu mansion. Till now she was staying in Jiang residence because of her parents but as they returned to the states, Lu Qiang brought her back.

Everyone welcomed her as finally she was going to be the daughter-in-law of the house. All were happy but Su Hui. She tried to not show her unhappiness on her face. When all were in the living room, Lu Feng arrived and he was happy to see Jiang Yuyan back in the Lu Mansion.

Greeting everyone, Lu Qiang looked at Jiang Yuyan who was standing beside him, "Let's go upstairs and freshen up, you must be tired." Jiang Yuyan nodded and both left to go upstairs just then a voice disturbed them.

"You are not married yet so it would be better for her to shift to some other room on the other floor." That was none other than Su Hui.

No one expected her to say this and they were upset with what she just said. All were aware that both of them were always together but Su Hui said it intended to upset Jiang Yuyan. Lu Feng was about to stop his mother but before that Lu Qiang did his job.

Lu turned to look at his aunt and said while staring in her eyes, "Since the first day she arrived in the Lu mansion, we are sleeping together." He then moved his sight across everyone present there and said, "Does anyone have a problem with it?"

No one said anything but Su Hui said again, "I was just saying it because both of you are not married and it's not a good thing for a girl to sleep with a man before wedding."

"She doesn't sleep with me. I am the one to go to her room every night and sleep with her. For me, she is already my wife and I don't need formalities that just meant to show others." Saying it he turned and held Jiang Yuayn's hand to go upstairs.

Suddenly he stopped in his track and said again while facing his back to everyone, "If anyone ever tries to say anything that could upset my wife, be ready to face the consequences." Lu Qiang's voice was so cold and serious, that Su Hui didn't dare to say a word further while others were upset with Su Hui for spoiling the happy atmosphere.

Lu Feng gave an unhappy glare to her mother and left to his room. When Jiang Yuyan and Lu Qing reached upstairs on the



first floor, Lu Lijun came out of his room, “Brother, when did you come back.”

Lu Qiang and Jiang Yuyan both let go of their hands when they saw Lu Lijun. “Just now. I went to bring Yuyan back.”

Lu Lijun smiled to see her and said, “Nice to see you back, Yuyan.”

Jiang Yuyan accepted his greeting with a smile. Just then Lu Feng reached the first floor. “Brother Lu Feng.” Li Lijun called him.

Hearing it, Lu Feng went to him and Lu Lijun spoke again, “I was about to come to your room. I want to show you something.”

“Let’s go then,” Lu Feng replied and as both moved to his room, Lu Feng stopped and said, “I am sorry for what my mother said to both of you.”

“You don’t need to, Lu Feng. We all are used to her nature.” Lu Qiang replied.

“Does that woman again did something?” Lu Lijun asked.

“Aunt Su Hui, Lu Lijun.” Jiang Yuyan corrected him. She didn’t like that being a kid he was calling his aunt like this.

All three looked at her the way she ordered Lu Lijun. No one talked to him like this in an ordering way.

“Okay! Aunt Su Hui. Has she done something?” Lu Lijun asked not getting upset at her.

Lu Qiang and Lu Feng were a bit surprised to see how easily he listened to her.

“Nothing, Lu Lijun. As an elder, she was suggesting to us something,” She replied.

“Haha! And I am sure that suggestion must be something annoying.” Saying it he turned to look at Lu Feng, “Let’s go, brother.

Jiang Yuyan didn’t know what to say to him and continued staring at his retreating back.

“Don’t be so surprised. You will get used to him too.” Lu Qiang said with a smile on his face. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

“When are you going to tell me about Lu Lijun?” she asked.

## 328 Shocked Lu Feng...

“When are you going to tell me about Lu Lijun?” Jiang Yuyan asked.

“Soon. First, let’s go and freshen up. I am starving for a few days so want to eat all I want,” Lu Qiang said with a mischievous smile on his face.

Jiang Yuyan understood what he meant and stepped towards the staircase to go to the second floor, leaving him behind as not wanting to react to his words.

Lu Qiang followed her and asked, “Why are you running away?”

“I am not. I am just tired so want to get fresh.” She replied and continued going ahead.

Following her and catching up to her pace he said, “Tired? Huh? I haven’t done anything yet to make you feel tired.”

Jiang Yuyan walked faster to avoid his evil intentions and went to her room as soon as she could go. The moment she reached the door, she said, “See you in sometime, to go for dinner. I will be ready faster.”

Knowing her intention to send him to his room, he said, “But I want you to get ready in front of me.” saying it he opened the door of her room and pulled her inside.

“What are you doing? Soon it will be a time of dinner and I don’t want them to keep waiting.” She tried to get away from him but Lu Qiang held her tightly closer to him, holding her tightly by her waist.

“I told you I am starving for few days and when my favorite meal is in front of me, how can you expect me not to taste it?” saying it he tried to kiss her but she moved her head back to stop him.

“Later. Not now.” She said.

“Later? I don’t know what does it mean?” he said again being ready to kiss her but this time Jiang Yuyan covered his lips with her palm to stop him. she knew he won’t stop once he will start and she didn’t have any intention to be late for the dinner as not wanting to face Su Hui’s harsh words.

“So you don’t want to listen, huh?” Saying it, he lifted her in his arms and took her inside the bathroom.

Making her stand under the shower he turned on the water and stood there with her getting drenched in water from the shower. Before Jiang Yuyan could say anything, Lu Qiang pinned her against the glass wall behind and kissed her.

Jiang Yuyan didn’t resist the kiss as a mere touch of his warm lips was enough to melt her determination to stop him. she kissed him back with an equal passion, forgetting what she was worried about a moment before.

Both were away from each other after they spend a night of their engagement together. They missed each other and waited for the day when they will be together again.

Once both were breathless, Lu Qiang parted away from her lips and said, “Do you still want me to stop?”

Jiang Yuyan shook her head lightly while staring into his eyes and moving her wanting for more sight from his eyes to his wet lips just to kiss him back.

Breaking a kiss, Lu Qiang said, “I want our wedding night as soon as possible. It’s hard to hold back now.”

“Let’s get married then,” she said.

“Hmm!” He nodded and said, “Till then I can do something at least.” Saying it he went down on her, leaving her gasping for air while moaning loudly. In a while, both came out of the bathroom and got ready to go downstairs.

At the same time, In Lu Feng’s room.

“Brother, Lu Feng. See what I am working on.” Saying it, Lu Lijun passed him a car in his hands.

“Car?” Lu Feng asked while observing it.

“Not just a simple car. I am modifying it by fixing a camera in it. I will control it with this remote and then I can see, what is happening where ever this car will move.

“That’s nice but why are you putting so much efforts, we can just buy one for you.”

“I know but it’s exciting to create it by myself. Hold it.” Lu Lijun passed a tablet in his hand to Lu Feng and both sat on the couch. “We can try it now. Its camera and recorder are yet to fix but we can at least check something.”

Lu Lijun moved the car out of Lu Feng’s room to move it around in the corridor. Both were busy observing the clarity of the camera just then it showed someone was coming in the direction of Lu Feng’s room.

The camera was just able to show the feet of the person as it was from a short distance as well as it was not set to see the things at a height. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

Just by seeing feet, Lu Feng understood who that was and said, “Lu Lijun, we can check this tomorrow. We should go for dinner in some time.”

“I understand brother. It’s fine.” Lu Lijun understood, why Lu Feng said it as he too guessed the person coming to the room. Collecting his things, Lu Lijun left Lu Feng’s room and on the way back he crossed path with a person, just outside of the room.

Lu Lijun avoided the person as showing he was busy with the stuff in his hands and left. That was Su Hui and she was not surprised to see Lu Lijun there. She entered the room and Lu Feng was ready to go to freshen up.

Seeing his mother, he said, “You came at the wrong time. I am going to freshen up.”

“No problem, son. I will wait for you.” Saying it she sat on the couch.

“I will take a time so....”

“Take all your time, I will wait,” Su Hui said as she was determined to talk to him.

Lu Feng knew his stubborn mother, sighing deeply he asked, “What is it?”

“Until when are you going to let go of a thing form your hands when you deserve it the most.” She directly came to the point.

“Not again, mother. I told you, I am not interested in business so I don’t deserve to handle it,” Lu Feng replied annoyingly to hear the same thing from his mother as always.

“I am not talking about business,” Su Hui said.

“Then?” he asked.

“Jiang Yuyan,” she replied and it made all the colors from his face to fly away.

## 329 Fighting With His Innerself..

“Not again, mother. I told you, I am not interested in business so I don’t deserve to handle it,” Lu Feng replied annoyingly to hear the same thing from his mother, as always.

“I am not talking about business,” Su Hui said.

“Then?” Lu Feng asked to think about what another thing his mother could be interested in other than money and power.

“Jiang Yuyan,” she replied without blinking an eye and it made all the colors from his face to fly away.

“Yuyan? What are you talking about mother?” He asked collecting his thoughts together as to pretend he was not affected by her sudden and surprising words.

“If you didn’t get me, then why your face turned pale when I mentioned her name?” she asked. not falling for his act.

“Because what you just said doesn’t make any sense,” He replied coldly.

“Really? You are my son and I know what you like and what you don’t,” saying it leaned back in a couch looking at her son who was standing near the bathroom door.

Lu Feng smirked and said while going towards his bed and sitting on its edge, “Is that so? Then why don’t you act according to how I like. Why you keep saying and doing the things that I don’t like.” He asked getting annoyed at her.

“Forger about this old woman. Talk about yourself. I know you like her.” She continued taking out a topic of his feelings about Jiang Yuyan.

“She is my friend and it’s obvious to like your friends. You can’t be a friend with someone whom you don’t like.” He tried to give a logical reply but his mother had her own things in mind.

“It’s more than just a friend and the way you look at her, that is enough to show the truth.”

“Mother!” He exclaimed with anger. “Why are you bringing up nonsense things?” he asked.

Su Hui maintained her calmness though her son was angry at her and said, “I am just trying to make you realize what you have lost just because of your idiotic decision to give up on business and what else you are going to lose. If you were sitting on that chair where Lu Qiang is right now, then you would have a woman with you too whom you liked since long.”

“You have mistaken, mother. She was his since the start. also, I don’t think about her in that way.” He replied.

“No! that power and position gave him all these things. “She didn’t want to give up as she was blinded by the thing that money and power was everything.

“Matter of hearts are not dependent on money but you won’t understand it as you lack the heart.” His words were cold and hurting.

“Say whatever you want about me but I will keep worrying about my son and won’t stop making you understand the things.”

“No need. I can look after myself.”

“It’s sad for me to see that in return of all the sacrifices, my son only received an aloofness,” she said sadly but Lu Feng was not affected by it.

“If you are done, then you can leave.” Saying it Lu Feng turned and left to get freshen up.

Su Hui knew her son was stubborn so for a time being she preferred to leave.

When Lu Feng was in front of his mother, he showed he was strong and her words meant nothing to him but as he entered inside the bathroom, he gave up on his cold expressions and stood while resting his back on the door of the bathroom with his eyes closed, looking like he was exhausted.



After spending a few moments standing like this, he moved to have a shower. The words of his mother, what she said about Jiang Yuyan were ringing in his ears. He spent a while standing under a shower while his hands resting on the glass wall with his head lowered down and eyes closed.

Water was running down, making its way across his toned muscular body. His brain was messed up with so many thoughts those were known only to him. The thoughts about why he took a decision to stay away from the business and why he did so many things for what his family hated him.

Tears rolled down from his eyes but those were washing down with the water from the shower as he didn't want to recognize that he was hurt and crying. It was his effort of not wanting to see his own tears. He was fighting with his inner self for long and no one knew about it.

Once his eyes stopped what he doesn't want them to do, Lu Feng turned off the shower and went in front of the mirror. Staring at his own reflection he said, "You can't be weak or all your efforts will be useless."

He sighed and stared in his own eyes as searching for something and thought, 'is it that obvious for everyone to know about my feelings for her. I should do something or it would be bad.'

He dressed up and went downstairs for dinner. Lu Qiang and Jiang Yuyan reached there too and everyone took their seats. Su Hui looked at her son who too noticed his mother was looking at him but before he could avert his sight, her sight moved towards Lu Qiang and Jiang Yuyan who were sitting next to each other.

Lu Feng understood it was his mother's evil effort to show him what she said when she was in his room. Lu Feng decided not to look at Jiang Yuyan even for a moment as he didn't want his mother to think she was right about his liking towards her.

He finished his dinner faster and excused himself, "I have some work to do so I will take a leave."

“At this hour after dinner, what is so important Lu Feng that you didn’t even finish your dinner properly?” Elder Lu asked worriedly.

---

In the mobile app, you will see the ranking around 90 but it is because now it shows the combined ranking of translations and original novels. the actual ranking of the original novel where my novel belongs to, you can see it in a laptop on the website and it’s around 25-28 right now. So our target of top 20 is not that far.. keep voting and I will write 10 chapters of mass release.. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

## 330 Thinking About You Is A Sin For Me...

In the next half an hour, Lu Feng was sitting down on the floor while his head resting on the center table with his one hand spread below his head as a cushion and another one was holding a wine glass which was on the table.

He was staring at the glass while tears rolling down from his eyes. Just then he thought he saw something through the glass. Keeping the glass aside away from his sight to take a proper look, he tried to see what was that. To his surprise there was someone and that was a woman, sitting on his right side.

Not being able to see her face clearly because of his teary and hazy eyes, he rubbed his eyes with his fingers and what he saw next was hard to believe for him. That was Jiang Yuyan who was sitting there, looking at him with a smile on her face.

“What are you doing here, Yuyan? You should not be here at this hour.” He asked but she didn’t reply and instead continued staring at him with a smile on her face. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

“Don’t smile at me like this. It makes my heart beat faster. You don’t know how pretty you look when you smile.” He paused and said after thinking about something, “No...No I am wrong. Actually, you look pretty in every way, whether you laugh, cry or get angry. I like you in every way.” Saying it he continued staring in her eyes but there was no reaction from her.

“Do you like me?” he asked but Jiang Yuyan was just looking at him while smiling.

“You don’t want to answer me? Fine, just stay here with me and let me see you till my heart’s content.” Saying it he continued staring at her with a smile on his face like he never

saw her before. His smile showed how happy he was to see her in front of him.

Soon there was a change in his expressions and he lifted his head up from the center table to sit properly. Without breaking eye contact with her for a single moment he leaned forward towards her to move closer.

He was so close to her, leaving just a distance of an inch between both of them. Staring into her eyes with his intense gaze while she was looking at him with a puzzled expression on her face as not knowing what was in his mind, he moved closer to touch her soft pink lips.

When Lu Feng was just about to touch her lips with his, he stopped and moved his face to the other side of her face not letting his desire to take over his rationality.

He smiled at himself and said with his eyes closed, “Even in my dreams, I can’t dare to do anything with you.”

Saying it he moved back to look at her. He wanted to caress her cheeks but he retreated his hand and said while looking into her bright eyes, “Thinking about you, in this way is a sin for me. Forgive me, Yuyan.”

He went back to his previous position and drank the whole wine that was left in his glass. Putting the glass back on the table, he said, “I will try to forget you, Yuyan” and he fell asleep while resting his head back on the center table. Tears were still rolling down from his eyes.

When Lu Qiang and Jiang Yuyan were in the bedroom, Jiang Yuyan fell asleep but Lu Qiang was not able to sleep. Since he came back from the dining room, he was thinking about Lu Feng and waiting for him to come back home.

He checked the time and it was almost midnight and for the past few months, Lu Feng was coming back home before dinner time. His sudden stay outside of the mansion and the way left dinner in the middle, made Lu Qiang worried.

He grabbed his cellphone from the bedside table and dialed Lu Feng’s number but he didn’t receive it even after calling him

again and again. Getting off from the bed, Lu Qiang wore his jacket and moved to leave the room.

“Is there anything to be worried about?” Just as he was about to go out of the room, Jiang Yuyan woke up. She was sleeping so he didn’t want to wake her up.

Lu Qiang went back to the bed and kissed her on a forehead, “Nothing serious but I need to go somewhere. You rest.”

Jiang Yuyan didn’t ask him anything and just nodded as she could see he was worried about something. Lu Qiang left the mansion and straight drove to Lu Feng’s apartment. As it was far, it took a while to reach there.

Reaching in front of the apartment’s door, Lu Qiang pressed the doorbell button but no one responded from inside. Lu Qiang knew the password of his apartment as he saw it the last time he was there with Lu Feng.

Without thinking for a moment, he entered the password and dashed inside just to see drunk Lu Feng sleeping while resting his head on the center table. Lu Qiang felt worried and went to him. “Lu Feng” Calling his name he tried to wake him up but seeing the empty wine bottle and the condition Lu Feng was in, Lu Qiang understood there was no use.

Lu Qiang took him to the bed and made him sleep there. Sitting on the couch, he was looking at the Lu Feng to know what had happened to him suddenly. Somewhere he guessed the reason and he felt guilty about it.

Messaging Jiang Yuyan that he won’t be coming back home, Lu Qiang slept on the couch waiting for morning to arrive so that he can talk to his brother.

After Lu Qiang left, Jiang Yuyan was not able to sleep and she was standing near the window, staring outside. After an hour, she got a message from Lu Qiang. After reading it she replied to him saying, “Okay. Take care.”

She knew there must be something really important that he had to go so she didn’t ask where and why he went instead she was worried about him.

## 331 Worried For A Brother..

The next morning, Lu Feng woke up with his head hurting badly. Rubbing his eyes with his palms to see clearly, as he was still not able to open his eyes completely, he continued staring at the ceiling. He thought about something and the first thing that flashed in his mind was, he saw Jiang Yuyan there last night.

Thinking about it, he sat up in his bed immediately and looked around in the room, just then a voice disturbed him, “You woke up, finally.”

That was Lu Qiang who came out of the bathroom after taking a shower and strode towards Lu Feng’s wardrobe to get clothes for himself.

“L...Lu Qiang! How come you are here? When did....” Lu Feng was shocked to see him there. His head was hurting badly and he was holding it with his hands.

“You just woke up and started to ask questions. Take it easy,” Lu Qiang replied not showing any interest in his questions.

Lu Feng stopped asking him anything and continued pressing his temples. Lu Qiang pulled out sets of clothes for himself and went to the dining table where he kept a drink prepared by him to lessen Lu Feng’s hangover.

Taking the glass in his hand, Lu Qiang went to Lu Feng and said, “Drink it. You will feel better.”

Lu Feng accepted it and emptied out the whole glass. “Thank you.”

Lu Qiang took back the glass from his hands and said, “Go get fresh and later we can talk.”

Lu Feng nodded and went to the bathroom while Lu Qiang went to get dressed up. When Lu Feng came out of the bathroom, Lu Qiang was arranging breakfast on the dining table which he ordered from outside.

Lu Feng quietly went to the wardrobe and got dressed up. He went to the dining table for breakfast and sat on the chair opposite to Lu Qiang. Both had so many questions in mind but they were silent as not knowing from where to start.

Lu Feng was worried to think about what Lu Qiang will say and ask after seeing him in a bad condition previous night. Moreover, as Lu Qiang was there that means he would have sensed something for sure.

Lu Qiang wanted to make Lu Feng comfortable first and given his drunken condition, Lu Qiang wanted him to eat properly and be relaxed. He was aware of there must be something serious that Lu Feng suddenly acted like this and asking the reason in a haste was not a good idea.

While eating, Lu Feng asked, looking at his dish as he didn't dare to look into Lu Qiang's eyes, "When did you come here?"

"Last night." Lu Qiang answered calmly while eating his breakfast.

"Any particular reason?" Lu Feng asked not knowing what to ask him.

"Hmm!" Lu Qiang nodded.

Lu Feng finally looked at Lu Qiang as he was not saying or asking anything so he preferred to get the topic out by himself, "What reason?"

"My brother was not okay so I thought to come here and look after him. Did I do something wrong?" Lu Qiang answered while staring straight into his eyes.

Lu Feng averted his sight from Lu Qiang and asked while trying to get food in his chopsticks, "Who said I was not okay?"

"Does anyone need to tell me?" Lu Qiang said.

"I am fine Lu Qiang. I just felt like to be alone for a while," Lu Feng said still avoiding looking at Lu Qiang.

"Hmm! I can see that," Lu Qiang said sarcastically that made Lu Feng look at him and ask, "Did I do or say something that I

should not?” Lu Feng was tensed inside to think what if he had said something about Jiang Yuyan in his drunken condition.

“Why? Was there something that I should not see or hear?” Lu Qiang asked again.

Lu Feng gulped to hear it and said, “If I have done or said something inappropriate then ignore it. I was drunk.”

“It’s sad that I couldn’t get to see or hear anything because when I came here, you were already knocked out.” Lu Qiang wanted to lessen the burden of what Lu Feng was worried about as he already guessed what Lu Feng was thinking.

Hearing it, Lu Feng felt relieved but before he could relax more, Lu Qiang asked, “Now tell me what the problem is and what is the thing that is bugging you is?”

“There is nothing serious, Lu Qiang. It’s just my mother. You know she always talks senselessly.” Lu Feng answered. He knew, he had to answer something to Lu Qiang and he can’t just dodge his question. Also, what he said was the truth though it was not the whole thing.

“And what she said to upset you this much?” Lu Qiang asked not letting go of his question.

“I told you, senseless things.” Lu Feng replied, not wanting to explain everything. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

“And why you were so tensed to think that I might have seen or heard you saying something.” Lu Qiang asked again. He wanted to know and hear it from Lu Feng.

“Why are you going back there? It was nothing.” Lu Feng said, again avoiding to look into Lu Qiang’s eyes.

Lu Qiang noticed Lu Feng was not looking into his eyes and asked, “Was it about Yuyan?”

Hearing it, Lu Feng startled and stopped eating. His heart was racing faster as if he was caught by Lu Qiang and said, “What does she have to do with this?” Lu Feng’s face was flushed and he didn’t know what to do. He didn’t want Lu Qiang to get



him wrong, though he knew Lu Qiang was aware of his feelings about Jiang Yuyan.

Lu Qiang finally decided to speak about this matter without any hesitation to make Lu Feng not to feel guilty about his feelings towards Jiang Yuyan all the time. He continued talking and Lu Feng kept listening to him till he was done.

“I know you love Yuyan.”

## 332 Another Surprised Kiss...

“I know you love her too so you don’t have to feel bad about me knowing it. Also, I know, you can never have any bad intentions towards her and you too care for her as much as I and Jiang Yang do.”  
Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

Lu Feng looked into Lu Qiang’s eyes after hearing it. He was feeling emotional inside but controlled himself from showing it.

Lu Qiang continued, “Loving someone is not bad or it’s not in our hand so just accept it that you love her. Don’t be tensed in front of me all the time, thinking about what I might think about you. Don’t be hesitant all the time. I know what kind of a person you are and you are the one I trust the most with everything, even if it is about Yuyan.”

Lu Feng didn’t know what to say. He patted his chest with his left hand while still holding a bite in the chopstick in his right hand. He suddenly felt like his chest became heavy and exhaled out a few times through his mouth.

“If you are feeling heavy-hearted then let it go. Don’t stop yourself. No need to pretend all the time that you are very strong,” Lu Qiang said knowing what exactly Lu Feng was feeling at that moment.

Hearing it, finally, Lu Feng couldn’t stop himself and tears rolled down from his eyes. Lu Qiang didn’t disturb him and continued having his breakfast after passing him a tissue paper box. In a while, Lu Feng stopped crying and said, “I am sorry and thank you so much for understanding me.”

“What for? There is nothing wrong you did to say sorry and there is nothing special I did to thank me for,” Lu Qiang

replied.

Lu Feng pulled out tissue papers from the box and cleaned his face.

Lu Qiang smiled to look at him and said, “Man, you look really bad when you cry.”

“Not as much as you do. Do you want me to remind you the last time you cried?” Lu Feng said that made Lu Qiang smile.

“Well you are right so then let me take a picture of crying and pretty Lu Feng to show it to your darling.” Saying it Lu Qiang pulled out his mobile from his pocket.

“Don’t you dare to do it or you will see what kind of pictures of you I will send to Yuyan.” Lu Feng was back to his own self and Lu Qiang gave out a sigh of relief.

Whatever and how much these two talked was enough for both of them to understand each other and there was no need to drag it much so both stopped and preferred to be cool about it.

After finishing the breakfast, Lu Qiang was ready to leave the place and said, “Next time, I don’t want to see you like what I saw last night and I hope you won’t disappoint me.”

“Hmm! I won’t,” Lu Feng agreed and Lu Qiang left to go to the office.

While sitting in a car, Lu Qiang called Jiang Yuyan to ask if she went to university. He had already arranged for her to go to university.

Once Lu Qiang left the place, Lu Feng was thinking about so many things and thought to not do anything that can disappoint Lu Qiang and make his all effort of so many efforts to go waste.

In the hospital...

It was a day of Song Meilin to get discharged from the hospital so Jiang Yang came to take a final follow up on her. After doing his job and talking to her for a while, Jiang Yang left the room.

Once he left, Song Meilin looked at her daughter who was sitting on the couch without any expression on the face, “Don’t you think, you should ho and thank him?”

“He was doing his duty,” Nixxxxie replied coldly.

“That’s right but we should never forget to show our gratitude.” Song Meilin wanted her to go and talk to Jiang Yang as after this she was not sure if he would be able to see her daughter.

“Okay! As you say, mom.” Saying it she left the room and saw Jiang Yang walking across the corridor to go to the lift. She ran to catch him but till then he was already inside the lift and the door was about to be closed.

Seeing her coming towards the lift. Jiang Yang stopped the door from getting closed and let her inside.

The spy her brother kept there was looking at her running at him but as Jiang Yang closed the lift, he didn’t have any option but to just see them going and take the staircase to follow them as the second lift was busy.

Once the door was closed, Jiang Yang asked, “Where are you going?”

“I was coming to talk to you?” she replied while catching her breath as she ran before.

“Ohh! I thought you were going somewhere so I closed the door or I would have come out.”

“No, it’s fine. We can talk here.” She said.

The lift was going to the floor down where Jiang Yang had his cabin. As it was the VIP floor and the lift was just meant for doctors so there was no one inside.

But I don’t want to talk.” Saying it he pressed the button on the lift to go up before it could stop on the floor he was going to.

Hearing him, Nixxxxie looked at him but before she could understand, Jiang Yang kissed her. she was standing there with her eyes wide open in a shock not expecting something like to happen.

Jiang Yang kissed her softly as she was one delicate thing. He held her face in both hands and continued kissing which she didn't resist. When the lift was about to reach up at the VIP floor, Jiang Yang again pressed the button to go down on his floor without breaking a kiss.

# 333 Seems Like You Never Kissed Anyone..

Wiping her lips with his thumb her, Jiang Yang said, “You are so delicate.” Nixxie didn’t know what to say and just then the door of the lift open.

“Let’s go,” Jiang Yang said while signaling her to step out of the lift.

“Huh?” she stepped out not knowing why she listened to him and followed him involuntarily to his cabin.

On the way to the cabin, Jiang Yang wanted to hold her hand but he resisted the urge because he didn’t want others to see it. On that floor the staff from the hospital and other people were present. He was fine with those people seeing him but he was worried about her, knowing her family condition.

When they were near the cabin, Jiang Yang noticed the spy came downstairs to their floor by taking a staircase way and said, “Don’t worry about your mother. There are a few things I want you to know about her condition. Let’s go to my cabin.”

He said all this to show that spy and took her inside the cabin. The spy had no other option but to wait outside. The assistant doctor who knew the spy as he tricked him before was going from there.

“Hey, what are you doing here? Is your relative okay?” The assistant doctor asked a spy.

“The spy was startled with this and said, “Yes, the patient is fine.”

“Are you here to see the doctor?” The assistant doctor asked.

“No, I was just....”

“Ohh! Go it. Are you here to get fresh air? Then go to the garden that is on the ground floor.” The assistant doctor said

before the spy could say anything further and he had no other option but to leave the floor.

The assistant doctor didn't know what exactly was going there but he preferred to send that strange man away. He could sense that doctor Jiang Yang had a problem with that man and seeing him standing outside of his cabin, it made the assistant doctor feel suspicious. Once the spy left, He went back to work. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

In Jiang Yang's cabin, the moment they reached inside and the door was closed, Jiang Yang stopped in his track. Nixxie was walking behind him blindly while looking at the floor and couldn't realize he stopped and bumped into his back.

Jiang Yang smiled and turned to look at her but controlled the smile. She was already in a confusing state that is why she followed him and this sudden bumping into him, made her even more confused. She moved her sight up to look at his face.

Seeing him staring at her she gulped and stayed there like a statue.

"Now we can talk," he said, showing he didn't know what she was thinking or what she was feeling.

"Huh?" she was confused again.

"Haven't you said that you wanted to talk to me when we were in the elevator?" saying it he moved few steps back and stood while taking the support of his work table with his hands folded in front of his chest and she was standing in front of him.

"Ohh! Right." She came back to her senses that she lost after the kiss in the elevator.

She didn't expect him to change suddenly into a different person after that kiss and thought, 'Am I the only one affected by it. He is normal.'

Jiang Yang could see through her as he had an excellent sight to see what other person was thinking and because of that, he

could play with anyone's mind.

“So what did you wanted to talk?” He asked.

“Thank you so much for taking care of my mother and everything else.” She replied.

“You don't have to. I was doing my job.” He said.

“Hmm!” she nodded and stood there not knowing what to say further.

“And?” He asked.

“Nothing. That's it,” she replied.

“Just to say this much you ran to catch me?” he asked while acting unknown to her feelings.

She nodded, “Hmm! My mom asked me to say thank you to you so...”

Her mother was the excuse but in her heart, she too wanted to see and talk to him. There was no particular reason she could think of but there was a strong urge in her mind to go and talk to him and be with him. So, when her mother asked her, she ran to catch him.

“So you are here because your mother said. Hmm! Fine.” He said showing he was disappointed.

“No, I too wanted to say this so that was the reason too,” she tried to explain.

“Don't you have anything else to say to me?” he asked.

She shook her head and said, “I will leave now.” Saying it she was about to turn but just then Jiang Yang stepped forward and pulled her towards him by holding her hand.

“Why don't you say what is in your heart?” he asked while holding her close to him and staring into her eyes.

She was so close to him and felt like the words were choked in her throat but somehow replied, “I..I don't have anything to say.”

“Fine. As you have nothing to say then let me continue what I was doing a while before.” Saying it, he kissed her, not giving



her a chance to retreat.

Similar to last time, she was just standing like a statue and let him kiss her not knowing how to respond. Jiang Yang was lightly sucking and nibbling her lips. He understood the reason for her not doing anything all this time.

He parted away from her lips and said with a teasing smile on his lips, "It seems like you never kissed anyone."

Hearing it she pushed him and stood away from him while catching her breath. Jiang Yang got his answer and asked, "Are you okay?"

She nodded and said while avoiding to look into his eyes, "I will take a leave now."

The moment she turned, he called her again, "Nixxie!"

## 334 Evil Mother And Son..

Jiang Yang called her, “Nixxie!”

She turned to look at him. He picked up a card from the cardholder on his work table and stepped towards her, “Take this.”

Accepting it she looked at the card. It was Jiang Yang’s personal card with his contact number on it.

“If there is any kind of problem, you can contact me on this number,” he said.

She looked at him so he repeated again, “Though your mother is fine now if she had any problem, you can contact me directly.”

“Okay!” saying it she left the cabin and went back to the room.

Once she left, Jiang Yang sat in his chair and said while placing his hand on his heart, “You must be happy today. Well, I am happy too.” He had a wide smile on his face.

When Nixxie and Song Meilin reached home, the men in the home were not present. Nixxie was not concerned about her step-brother and the mistress of her father as she never wanted to see them but she expected her father to be there to welcome her mother. He didn’t even come to the hospital after he visited there once and nor he came to get her mother after the discharge.

She knew her father didn’t love her mother but still, she was expecting her father to do his job as a husband of her mother. Nixxie made sure her mother to be comfortable in her room and asked a female servant to be around her mother to look after her.

Xi mansion was just like any other lavish and luxurious home of the rich business families in the city that was set up in a vast piece of land with trees and a huge lawn around it with all the modern-day facilities available.

In the evening, Xi Guiren and Xi Cheng came back home. They were aware of the arrival of the women back in the home. Nixxxie was in the living room, instructing a servant about something when these men arrived.

Seeing his daughter, Xi Guiren went to her and asked, "How is your mother?"

"She is fine, father." She replied to which Xi Guiren hummed and didn't ask further.

"I hope you too are well, little sister." Suddenly Xi Cheng spoke but Nixxxie didn't reply to him and instead looked at her father and said, "She would be happy to see you father."

"I don't think so." Saying it Xi Guiren stepped to go upstairs to his room.

Once Xi Guiren left, Xi Cheng looked at Nixxxie, "Your mother and my father, they don't love each other. Get it inside your head, sister."

"And the reason you know well," she replied staring straight into his eyes.

Xi Cheng smirked, "Seems like, little bird has a tongue now." Xi Cheng said but before Nixxxie could say anything, someone arrived.

"How is your mother?" That was Xi Cheng's mother, Han Ju.

"You won't be happy to know it." Saying it Nixxxie turned and left. She never liked that woman but she and her mother had to bear with her.

"This little bird is getting bold. I think I should cut her wings as soon as possible." Xi Guiren said while looking at the retreating back of the Nixxxie.

"Leave them alone for some time, Xi Cheng," His mother said.

"Why are you being so concerned about them suddenly?" Xi Cheng asked to look at his mother who looked like she had something going in her mind.

Sitting on the sofa, she replied, "I am not concerned about them anymore but Song Meilin is in bad condition and if you

troubled them, your father might have a soft corner for them so it would be bad news for you.”

Xi Cheng sat on the sofa too and said, “He doesn’t care about them. It’s just that girl has a power in her hand so the father is being good to that mother and daughter.”

“You are wrong my son. If we have a pet in the house even for a month we have an attachment to that pet and we care for it. Don’t forget, those two women are your father’s wife and a daughter. He definitely cares for them but won’t show it. if you will trouble them, then he will show it openly.”

“Is it?” He asked.

“Hmm! Your father is being silent for years even though he is aware of lots of things so don’t make him break his silence and just do your job. Stay quiet for some time.”

“As you say, mother.” Xi Cheng was aware of his mother’s sharp brain and he decided to listen to her.

Xi Guiren went back to his room. after the death of their son Xi Guo, Song Meilin left their room and shifted to another one as breaking her relations with her husband unofficially. For Song Meilin, her husband was one the culprit for the death of her son as he didn’t take any action against his cunning mistress and her son. Since then Xi Guiren always had been alone in his room. Though he was alone, he never let his mistaress to take a place of his official wife in his bedroom. The mistress always had to be in her separate room.

Nixxie, her mother and her father had rooms on one side of the floor while the mistress and her son had their rooms on the other side of the floor. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

Knowing the thing that her husband didn’t give her place to his mistress, Song Meilin was happy but the pain of her son’s death was more than anything that whatever Xi Guiren did had no importance in her eyes. She hated her husband as much as she hated his mistress and a son.

After freshening up, Xi Guiren went to see his wife. Song Meilin was sitting in a chair near the window to get fresh air with her eyes closed.

Xi Guiren knocked on the door and went inside. Seeing her sitting in a chair he stood behind her few steps back and asked, "How are you?"

## 335 Sweet Doctor...

Xi Guiren knocked on the door and went inside. Seeing her sitting in a chair he stood behind her few steps back and asked, "How are you?"

Hearing his voice, Song Meilin opened her eyes and replied, "Still breathing and going to trouble you and your son for some more time."

Getting a cold reply from her as always, Xi Guiren was upset but he could understand the reason for her cold behavior and he was used to it for the past few years. "Good to hear it. I came to the hospital once but you were unconscious at that time."

She laughed a little and said, "Once? Hmm! Should I be grateful that you came to see if I am dead or still alive?"

After this, there was silence for a while as Xi Guiren didn't want to say anything that could upset his wife who just came back from the hospital. In the end, he just said, "Take care. I will take a leave" and he left.

Song Meilin had a cold expression on her face till he was there but once he left, she looked sad. Xi Guiren was the man she once loved and he was a father of her kids but how everything changed that shook their lives entirely and for that, she could never forgive her husband. They were husband and wife just on the papers but by heart, they were universe apart.

Once Xi Guiren left, Nixxie came to her mother in her room, "Mother, are you fine?"

Song Meilin was sitting her back facing towards her so she was glad that her daughter couldn't see her sad. she immediately collected herself and replied, "When my lovely daughter is here with me, I would always be fine."

Nixxie went to her mother and sat in front of her while kneeling. Holding her mother's hands and looking up at her,

Nixxxie said, “Don’t be worried about anything that might affect your health, mother.”

Song Meilin held Nixxxie’s hand and said while caressing it with a smile on her face, “I won’t and after all, I can’t ignore the instruction given by one sweet doctor.”

“Sweet doctor? Doctor Jiang Yang?” Nixxxie asked.

Song Meilin had pleasant expressions on her face when she mentioned about Jiang Yang as she could see how her daughter’s sad face brightened up hearing his name. “Hmm! He is so sweet that I can’t ignore his instruction even if I want to.”

“So, his words matter to you more than mine,” Nixxxie asked while pouting.

“Haha! Are you jealous?” Song Meilin asked looking at her daughter’s cutely frowning face.

“Why should I be?” she asked.

“Instead, I should be jealous knowing that my lovely daughter whom I grew up to be a lovely lady is now giving a place in her heart to someone else other than me.” Song Meilin decided to tease her daughter even more.

Hearing it, Nixxxie was shocked with her eyes open wide and replied, “W..what do you mean by that mother? There is no such thing.”

“Really?” Song Meilin asked while smiling brightly

“Hmm!” Nixxxie nodded.

“Okay! As you say.” Song Meilin didn’t tease her further.

Though Jiang Yang was not there, just his name was enough to bring a smile on these mother daughter’s faces which looked sad a while ago.

Nixxxie was looking at her mother who was smiling brightly after so long and in her heart, she felt thankful to Jiang Yang because he was the reason for this. In the hospital whenever he came to visit her mother, with his sweet talk he always made her smile.

Days passed by with Nixxie's mother getting better, Jiang Yuyan and Nixxie preparing for their exams, Jiang Yang missing his woman whom he could see once in a while with Jiang Yuyan whenever he went to see his sister to the university, Lu Qiang being busy with the business, Lu Feng being busy with his secret work, Ming Rusheng working hard to get the best position in the business world, Xi Cheng planning the next steps to secure his future as head of Xi group business.

One day when Song Meilin was alone in her room, the mistress, Han Ju went to see her. "How are you sister, Song Meilin?"

Song Meilin was sitting in her chair while going through a few important documents. When she saw Han Ju she sighed and said, "I haven't given you permission to enter my room."

"I know you are angry with me, sister Song Meilin but I am just here as I am concerned about your health." Han Ju said while standing in front of her. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

"You don't need to concern yourself with me." Song Meilin said and resumed her work.

Han Ju sat in the chair opposite her and continued, "Sister, can't we start things again?"

Song Meilin ignored her so Han Ju continued again.

"As much as you are hurt because of Xi Guiren, I am hurt too. You got to know about us after your wedding but I was in his life even before you, so think how much pain I had gone through." Han Ju made sure to sound as much as sad she could.

"I understood it that's why I allowed you to stay in this house by pitying you and your son but I regret that decision the most," Song Meilin replied.

Seeing Han Ju and Xi Cheng in front of her eyes every day was the biggest pain for Song Meilin but she was tolerating her and her son just for the safety of her only daughter and tried to



have a peaceful life with around them though they never talked to each other.

Han Ju knew, Song Meilin was not an easy woman to trick her but she was determined to be shameless and try her best.

Han Ju lowered down her tone to a regretting one and said, “I know what happened in the past was unfortunate and I am sad about it too but can’t you forget everything and look at Xi Cheng as your son. Can’t you forgive us? like that we all can be happy together.”

## 336 Brazen Han Ju..

“I know what happened in the past was unfortunate and I am sad about it too but can't you forget everything and look at Xi Cheng as your son? Can't you forgive us? and like that, we all can be happy together.”

These words from Han Ju Annoyed song Meilin. How can she talk about thinking of a murderer of her son as her own? How can she forgive these mother and son who took away her precious son away from her forever? Was it that easy? Was it even possible to do so? She wanted to shut this brazen and shameless woman badly.

Song Meilin leaned back in her chair trying to control her anger because being angry was not good for her health. Staring into Han Ju's shameless looking eyes with her cold ones, Song Meilin said, “Let me kill your son and then come to you saying forgive me and just accept Nixxxie as your daughter so that we all can be happy together like this. Should we do that?”

Hearing it Han Ju was left with no words to say. She never expected Song Meilin to say it as she knew, Song Meilin was one nice and a soft-hearted woman but now she was the one different woman who looked cold and ruthless.

“Sister what are you...”

“If you can't agree to this, then leave my room right now,” song Meilin said coldly and closed her eyes.

Frowning with anger, Han Ju left Song Meilin's room. she tried to convince Song Meilin just for the sake of her son as she knew, soon the power in her son's hand could be taken away.

Song Meilin was aware of Han Ju's intensions. She tried to handle it calmly as much as she could without getting angry but this talk reminded her about her son's death that made her emotional.

She stood up and went to her bed. From the bedside table, she took out an old album. Looking at the picture of her son in that album, she started to cry. "I am sorry, son. I couldn't punish them. Mother is sorry." "Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

She lied down in a bed while crying and even if she tried hard, she couldn't hold back her tears.

Being a strong woman in the past she could face any difficulty in life but the death of her son broke her completely and more than that the regret of not being able to punish the culprits at that time. Seeing then in front of her eyes every day having smiles on their faces not feeling guilty about their sin, continued breaking her from inside.

She would have been in a very bad condition but the thoughts of protecting her daughter kept her going and she continued living. Once she got rid of all the obstacles in her daughter's life, she thought to rest forever in peace.

Before dinner time, Nixxxie went to her mother's room and saw she was lying in a bed, not covering herself properly with the quilt. She stepped towards her mother to cover her, thinking that as she was sleeping she will wake her up later for the dinner but the moment she stepped towards her, she saw her mother was sweating and had tears rolling down from the corners of her eyes.

Feeling scared Nixxxie called her mother, "Mom!" She touched her mother's forehead to check her temperature and realized, her mother had a fever. She came out of the room and called for the servant whom she asked to attend her mother all the time, "Where were you? Haven't I asked you to look after my mother?"

The second madam, Han Ju called me for some work as she was going out with a young master.

"Are you the only servant here?" Nixxxie was angry. "Look after mother I will be back in a minute."

Nodding, a servant went to Song Meilin while Nixxxie went to her room. Entering her room, Nixxxie grabbed her bag and poured out all the stuff from it on the bed. Going through the stuff from her bag with her hands trembling with a fear of losing her mother, she finally found what she was searching for.

That was Jiang Yang's business card given to her by him. When the time came, she couldn't think about anyone but Jiang Yang.

With her hands still shaking, she immediately dialed his number and the moment he received the call, she spoke without giving him a chance to say anything, "My mother is not well. Don't know what happened to her. What should I do? Come here to see her please." She was anxious with her whole body trembling in fear.

Jiang Yang was sitting in a living room, watching the news on the television. When he saw an unknown number on his cell phone, he answered it. Before he could say hello, he heard a voice that showed it was an emergency. He recognized her voice and said, "Calm down, Nixxxie. Tell me what happened."

"I went to see the mother in her room and saw that she was sleeping but she has a high fever and she is not responding to me. W-What should I do now?" Nixxxie replied anxiously.

"don't panic. Call the ambulance to take her to the hospital and I will be there soon." Saying it, he cut the call and informed the hospital about the patient so that they could keep everything ready before the patient arrives.

No one was in the home so Nixxxie was already panicked. She couldn't expect help from Xi Cheng and his mother but her father too was not present in the home. She could only thought about Jiang Yang and called him and did what he said.

When Nixxxie and her mother reached the hospital, Jiang Yang was already present there. Seeing Jiang Yang, Nixxxie felt relieved. Jiang Yang and the hospital staff immediately took Song Meilin for the check-up and Nixxxie was waiting outside of the ER.

# 337 Are You Scared To Be Alone With Me?

In some time, Jiang Yang came out and seeing him, Nixxxie strode towards him, “Is she fine?”

“Hmm! She is,” Jiang Yang replied.

“What happened to her suddenly? She was absolutely fine since we left the hospital last time.”

Nixxxie was worried so Jiang Yang said to calm her down, “Nothing to be worried about. She was just stressed out a bit and might be emotionally unstable for some reason but she would be fine soon.”

Nixxxie was relieved to hear it but still, she was unable to believe that her mother was fine. Jiang

Yang sensed it and said to assure her while staring into her eyes, “Trust me.”

His confident and assuring gaze and just two words ‘Trust me!’ from him were enough to comfort her. Soon Song Meilin was transferred into the VIP room and Jiang Yang was with them all the time even if as a doctor his job was done.

Nixxxie was sitting on the couch while looking at her unconscious mother worriedly while Jiang Yang was busy with checking her and giving instructions to the nurses. He asked the nurse to leave as he decided to be with Nixxxie not willing to leave her alone.

Once everyone left, Jiang Yang sat beside her on a couch. Seeing him, Nixxxie looked at him and said, “You should go too as it’s late already.”

“Do you really want me to go?” He asked while resting back on a couch. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

She didn't know what to say and asked, instead, "Is there anything serious about my mother as you are still here to look after her, personally?"

"No!" He replied firmly making himself comfortable on the couch.

"Then?" she asked.

He stared into her eyes and replied with a soft voice, "I am here for you."

"Huh?" She was surprised to hear it.

"How can I leave you alone when you really need someone to be by your side to take care of you?" He replied.

Hearing it, she felt emotional and words choked in her throat. She was really alone and sad as the only person in her life was struggling between life and death. She was scared. She was scared to lose that person; she was scared to be left behind with no one by her side; she was scared to be surrounded by evil people around her.

Seeing her emotional, Jiang Yang moved towards her to hug her and she let him do it. At that moment he was the only person she could trust and felt safe with him, though he was someone new and still stranger to her.

Jiang Yang knew, no words would be enough to console her so he preferred to do what she needed most at the time, a warm and comforting hug.

in his warm embrace, she felt protected and soon the tears rolled down from her eyes. she hugged him back surrounding her arms around him while burying her face in his chest.

Jiang Yang let her cry for some time while caressing her head to calm her down. She was exhausted with all the things going around in her family and with worry about her mother. She continued crying for a while and when she was done, she moved back.

Jiang Yang wiped her tears with his fingers and asked, "Are you feeling better now?"

Nixxie nodded and said, "Thank you."

Jiang Yang passed her few tissue papers from the box on the center table and said, "Till morning she would be fine. As I have injected her with medicines, she will continue to sleep for a night, so you don't need to look after her. You should take a rest too."

Nixxxie nodded. "Did you have dinner?" He asked.

She shook her head while cleaning her face.

"Let's get something for you to eat."

"I am not hungry."

"I know but still you need to eat something." Saying it he got up from the couch and offered her his hand, "I am sure, your mother won't like her daughter to starve and fall sick."

Hearing it she couldn't say no to him and accepted his hand. Jiang Yang instructed a nurse to keep a watch on the patient even though there was nothing to be worried about. He took Nixxxie to his cabin and ordered something from outside. Though it was midnight, they were able to get something at least.

Sitting in his small resting place in his cabin, Jiang Yang asked her to eat the food he ordered for her. She was unwilling but started to eat it. "You?" she asked to look at him who was sitting on the chair opposite her.

"M full you have it," He replied.

She ate whatever she can. Jiang Yang cleaned the table while Nixxxie was staring outside of the window looking at the starry sky.

Jiang Yang looked at her calm and expressionless face and asked, "How about you sleep here tonight?"

"Huh?" she looked at him with questioning sight.

"Nono! Don't take me wrong. I was just asking you to sleep in this bed instead of a couch in the room. though the bed is small, it's really comfortable," he replied while clarifying his offer.

"I can't as I have to look after my mother." She denied.

“There is hospital staff that does their job sincerely. You should not be worried about it. Also, I am here to take care of her as her doctor. Don't you trust me?” He said and his last line made her feel guilty.

“It's not that. I was....”

“Are you scared of being alone with me?” he asked before she could find another excuse and this one made speechless and out of excuses so she exclaimed, “No. It's not that.”

“If not then rest here.” Saying it like he was ordering her, he pointed towards the bed.

Jiang Yang wanted her to relax and stay away from the worry as her mother was already safe but being in the room with her mother would only make her feel even more worried and she wouldn't be able to take a rest



## 338 Emotionally Exhausted...

Jiang Yang was worried about Nixxie. He wanted her to relax and stay away from the worry as her mother was already safe but being in the room there would only make her feel even more worried and she wouldn't be able to take a rest.

From what he saw, he thought there was a need for her to take proper rest as she already spent more of her time in hospital being with her mother alone for the past few days.

Nixxie agreed to what he said and strode towards the bed but before she could climb it, she asked, "And you?"

"Don't worry about me. You sleep here and I will be back in sometime after taking a look at your mother." Saying it he left the room.

Nixxie lied down in the small bed that was enough for only one person to sleep comfortably.

When Jiang Yang returned, he saw Nixxie was asleep. Covering her in a quilt, he left the room and went to his cabin. He sat on his chair and closed his eyes while leaning back into it to sleep.

Even after trying hard, Jiang Yang couldn't sleep. He grabbed the bottle from his table and had a few sips of water. Suddenly he thought to take a look at Nixxie and when he went inside, Nixxie was crying while sleeping in a bed.

Stepping forward, he called her, "Nixxie! Are you okay?"

She looked at him with her teary eyes but couldn't answer him so he asked again, "Nightmare?"

She shook her head to say 'No'.

"Are you hurt somewhere?"

She shook her head again to say 'No.'

“Does someone said anything to make you cry?”

Again he got the same reaction from her so he was worried to see her cry without any reason.

Then?” He asked.

“I don’t know,” she replied as not knowing why she was crying and sat up in a bed.

Hearing it, Jiang Yang understood what was the reason for her crying. Sitting on the edge of the bed, he said, “It happens when you are tired emotionally so I think it’s fine.”

He could see that Nixxxie was tired of all the things going around her in her family. At such a young age she was facing the brutal reality of the world where greed for money and power can destroy someone’s life.

The age when she had to live her life having fun, she was going through the hardship of life. She was alone with no one to lean on. Her family was not hers except for her mother. She was the money bag for her others which they didn’t want to let go of from their hands. Jiang Yang wanted to be the one to take care of her and the one she could lean on.

Nixxxie hugged Jiang yang as feeling like he was the solution for all her worries and started to cry again. Jiang Yang hugged her back letting her cry. Once she was done, he offered her water to drink. She drank it and passed the bottle back to him.

Keeping the bottle back on the coffee table, Jiang Yang looked at her while standing near the table and said, “Sleep now. You already cried a lot and now your brain needs a rest or tomorrow you will have a headache.”

She heard him but instead of sleeping, she was looking at him.

Understanding the reason for her stare he said, “Don’t worry. I would be sitting here.” Saying it he sat in one of the chairs around the coffee table.

She was still looking at him so he asked, “Do you want me to go out?”

She shook her head but as saying ‘No’ still looking at him. Jiang Yang didn’t ask anything further and stood up from the

chair. Taking out his white doctor apron and keeping it on one chair, he stepped towards the bed and sat beside her being ready to sleep.

“This bed is very small so we have to adjust a bit. There won’t be a space between us or the next moment I would be on the floor.” He said, adjusting himself on the bed.

Nixxxie was happy to see how he understood her without saying a single word. Shifting a bit back, Nixxxie made a space for him as much as she could. The bed meant for only one person was now going to accommodate two people.

“Lie down, I will cover you with this.” He said while holding a quilt in his hands.

Nixxxie lied down while adjusting herself in a small space to keep enough space for him. Jiang Yang covered her with a quilt and lied down beside her. Both were sleeping while facing the ceiling and there was not an inch of space between them.

“Don’t hesitate to turn and hug me if you want.” He said. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

Nixxxie turned on her one side facing him. Jiang Yang could sense her gaze on him and turned his face to look at her.

“Close your eyes. I told you already, you need to sleep.”

She nodded and closed her eyes. Jiang Yang turned to face her and hugged her. Nixxxie didn’t hesitate and hugged him back while burying her head in his chest. Jiang Yang continued patting her with a smile on his face and his eyes closed.

He was the kind of person to understand when and what the person in front of him needed the most. He could understand Nixxxie too and did what could make her happy. Moreover, he was happy too.

Jiang Yang woke up early morning while Nixxxie was still sleeping with her hand surrounded him. taking her hand off from him, Jiang yang slowly got down from the bed and smiled to look at her, “Still a kid.” Saying it he left to freshen up and later went to his cabin.

when Nixxxie woke up, she saw he was not there. stepping out of the bed, she opened the door of the room to look for him in his cabin.

## 339 Bigger Things...

When Nixxxie woke up she saw, Jiang Yang was not there. Stepping out of the bed, she opened the door of the room to look for him in his cabin.

She saw, Jiang Yang was sitting in his chair with his eyes closed. she stepped forward with light footsteps, not making any sound. Standing a few steps away from him, she was thinking how to call him and just then, Jiang Yang spoke after taking a deep breath without opening his eyes, “Had a nice sleep, princess?”

Nixxxie was startled to hear it as she thought he was sleeping and with his eyes closed how he could see, she was there. “I thought you were sleeping.”

“Umm, not exactly,” he said.

Standing to the one side of his table while looking at his sleepy eyes, she said, “I am sorry to trouble you last night.”

“Trouble? Huh! Was there any?” He asked looking at her apologetic face.

As he didn't get her, she tried to explain. “You couldn't sleep comfortably because of me as there was not enough space on the bed and .....” she stopped.

“And you were sleeping while hugging me. Is that what you were about to say?” Jiang Yang finished her incomplete line.

She nodded as feeling shy about it and she couldn't understand how she got that courage to behave like that with his as if they were not strangers anymore.

Jiang Yang smiled to see her shy and said, “If that is what you call trouble then I would like to trouble myself all the time.”

She looked at him not knowing what to say. Her heart was beating faster as not being able to realize what exactly was happening to her. The way he teased her, those words were

bold but she liked it and she could feel that slowly she was getting attracted towards him.

When she slept while hugging him, it was after a long time she was sleeping so soundly and without worrying about anything as if he had taken away the entire burden from her mind and her heart. His embrace was like the safest and peaceful place for her and she wanted to be there always but at the same time, she wanted to deny it too.

Seeing her staring at him like she was in a daze, he got up from the chair and strode towards her. she was still looking at him, until he reached to stand facing her, her pretty eyes staring into his calm ones.

Jiang Yang kissed her on the forehead and asked, “Is it enough?”

“Huh?” she looked at him questioningly.

Seeing her not answering his question, Jiang Yang pecked on her lips leaving her with her eyes wide open in a shock and asked again, “Is it enough or.....”

Before he could speak or do anything further, Nixxxie stepped back realizing what was going on and said, “I will go. I need to see mother.”

“I just came back after visiting her, she is fine,” Jiang Yang said to assure her.

“She woke up?” she asked.

“No! but in the next hour, she will be awake for sure.”

“Glad to know it.” She was relieved to know her mother was fine.

“Now you know about her so you can go back to the room and freshen up. I have an extra set of toothbrushes there on a shelf. You can use it,” Jiang Yang said, not willing to let go of her back so soon.

She looked at him being hesitant to do what he asked, so Jiang Yang said again, “Don’t hesitate for such small things when we have done bigger things.”

“Bigger things?” She asked having puzzled expressions.

“Sleeping in a small bed while cuddling each other whole night and sharing a kiss twice.” He replied.

Nixxxie was so embarrassed to hear it that she didn't say a single word and turned around to go back to the room quietly before he could remind her something more embarrassing.

Seeing her like this Jiang Yang smiled and went back to his chair and made a call.

Nixxxie found an extra pack of toothbrushes and used it. Once she was done freshening up, she was thinking how to go out and what to say to him but just then, there was a knock on the door. That was Jiang Yang who came to the room with breakfast for both of them in his hands which he ordered from outside.

Nixxxie was standing near the window while staring outside. Jiang Yang put the breakfast on the table and said, “Let's have breakfast and later we can go to see your mother.”

Nixxxie didn't respond so he asked, “What are you thinking about?”

Giving out a deep sigh, she said, “My mother is there struggling with her health and I am here with you instead of being with her.”

Jiang Yang nodded and said, “Hmm! You are right. you should have been with her.”  
Find authorized novels in Webnovel ,  
faster updates, better experience , Please click  
[www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

Hearing it, Nixxxie looked at him with a questioning gaze, thinking that he was the one to stop her when she wanted to go back to her mother.

“I mean to say, you should have been with her staring at her whole night with your teary eyes. Then, thinking about all the bad things going around and regretting for not looking after her properly and she had to be in the hospital again just because of your ignorance towards her. In short, you should

have blamed yourself the whole night for no valid reason while crying then fall sick, the next morning.”

Nixxie was not surprised to hear it as this is what she would have done exactly. The previous night, she was already thinking about it and started to cry. If it was not for Jiang Yang, she would have been crying the whole night.

Seeing her calm, he said again, ” Well, I don’t mind if you fall sick because it is better that way.” Saying it he sat in one of the chairs and signaled her to sit in another chair to have breakfast.

Not getting what he was trying to say, she asked while sitting in the chair in front of him, “What do you mean?”



## 340 Testing To Scare Her...

Not getting what Jiang Yang was trying to say, Nixxxie asked while sitting in the chair in front of him, "What do you mean?"

"If you fall sick then I will directly admit you in the hospital for at least a month saying it's something serious and this way, I will spend more time with you by making an excuse to treat my special patient. At least for a month, I won't have to think about how to meet you," He replied casually while arranging breakfast on the table.

"So you want me to fall sick for that?" she asked mockingly.

"When did I say that but if you are sick, I will make you better immediately by some medicine mixed with my love and care," He replied.

Hearing it, she couldn't help but smile.

Looking at the food containers, Jiang Yang said, "As usual we have to share food in the same container as you know....."

"It's fine with me." Saying it before he could say the same thing from last time, she picked up chopsticks and started to eat. This time she was not hesitant and ate comfortably. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

After having a few bites quietly, Jiang Yang asked, "Can't we meet outside ones in a while after you go back to your home?"

Nixxxie stopped eating and looked at him, "We can." Nixxxie didn't say no because she too wanted to meet him.

Hearing it Jiang Yang was happy but he controlled from showing it and replied quietly, "Glad to hear it."

After finishing breakfast, Nixxxie went back to her mother. When she entered the room, her father and her step-brother were inside already. Seeing them she went to her mother who was awake and the nurse was changing her IV drip. Song Meilin was not happy to see these two men there.

“Father, when did you come?” Nixxxie asked.

“Just a moment before. Early morning I got to know that both of you are here. Where were you?” Xi Guiren asked?

Nixxxie was startled with the question but before she could say anything, Xi Cheng spoke, “She must have gone to the doctor to ask something important. Am I right little sister?”

Nixxxie noticed the evil smirk on Xi Cheng’s lips and didn’t reply. She looked at her father and said, “I was just out to get some fresh air.”

“Father, my stepmother, and little sister seem to like a doctor here a lot that they both come here often. What is the name of the doctor again?” Xi Cheng asked to look at Nixxxie who was trying to avoid to talk to him.

Nixxxie gulped to hear it as she was scared of her evil step-brother and looked at her father who was looking at her mother with worried expressions but her mother was not sparing him a single glance.

Not getting an answer from Nixxxie, Xi Cheng asked again, “You didn’t answer.”

“There are so many doctors who are looking after mother so I don’t know which one you are exactly asking for,” Nixxxie replied annoyingly.

“Ohh now I remember.” He moved his sight from Nixxxie to his father and said, “Father his name is Jiang Yang and you know who he is?”

Xi Guiren looked at him and asked, “Who?”

“He is the brother of president Lu’s fiancé,” Xi Guiren answered while passing his sight across Song Meilin and Nixxxie and both were quiet about it. Xi Guiren took out information about Jiang Yang which means it was clear that he had sensed something and it was his indirect signal to these women that he was keeping eye on them.

“Hmm!” Xi Guiren just hummed not showing much interest but Xi Cheng still continued, “Father I think we should meet

the doctor personally to show our gratitude to him for taking care of my step-mother.

Nixxie's feet tremble to hear it. She was scared for Jiang Yang now but before she could say anything, Xi Guiren spoke, "Sometime later as I have important things to do."

"As you say, father." Xi Guiren was testing Nixxie to see how she will react and exactly the same thing happened what he expected. She was scared to hear it and Xi Cheng got his answer. As he did what he wanted, he preferred to listen to his father.

Just then the nurse finished her work and went out of the room. Xi Guiren looked at his wife and asked, "Are you feeling better now?"

"How can I? When I see unpleasant sight in front of me," Song Meilin replied coldly.

Xi Guiren didn't react to her cold behavior and said, "Take care and let me know if you need something."

Song Meilin didn't reply to him and waited for father and son to leave. Before leaving, Xi Guiren passed a bag to his daughter and said, "This is for both of you. I asked the servant to pack your stuff in it." Saying it, he turned and stepped towards the door.

When they left, Song Meilin looked at her daughter who was still affected by what Xi Cheng said about Jiang Yang, so she said to calm her daughter down, "Don't worry. Right now he is not in a position to do anything or to harm anyone."

"Nixxie looked at her mother with her scared eyes and said, "I am still worried because he can do anything."

"We need to be careful but there is no need to be scared of him as most of the things are in our favor now after waiting for so many years. Just know one thing, whatever he does, just be strong. More you will show him your weakness more he will try to use it," Song Meilin said.

"I will mother but I am worried about....." She stopped not knowing how to say her mother that she was worried about Jiang Yang and why?

“You don’t need to be worried about doctor Jiang Yang because he has a stronger back up than you can imagine,” Song Meilin replied knowing what her daughter was thinking.

## 341 Living With Parasites...

“President Lu Qiang?” Nixxxie asked.

“Hmm! You will know the things slowly, Now forget it show me your pretty smile so that my heart can feel better.”

Hearing it Nixxxie smiled and hugged her mother who was sitting on the bed while resting on the backrest.

Song Meilin hugged her back and said while patting her gently, “My precious daughter, soon everything will be fine and we will be happy like in the past.”

“I want it too, mother.”

When these mother daughters were busy with the thought of the happy future, those father and son were going out of the hospital. On the way to their cars, Xi Guiren spoke, “What is the need to keep an eye on them in the hospital?”

When Xi Guiren came out of Song Meilin’s room, he saw one of Xi Cheng’s men standing far away in the corridor but his sharp eyes didn’t fell to recognize him.

“Father, I am just worried about them. Knowing the fact that these two women will never ask us for help, I just wanted to be ready to help them if the situation arises. After all, they belong to the Xi family and we should always look after our family. Did I do something wrong?” Xi Cheng answered in a way that Xi Guiren couldn’t say anything and continued to walk towards his car.

Seeing his father not reacting and leaving in a car, Xi Cheng smiled mischievously and sat in his car too. “Father, you should not underestimate your son. I know what goes in your mind as I am your son.”  
Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

Soon, Song Meilin was discharged from the hospital and things went back to its normal place. In Between, whenever

Jiang Yang got time, he used to go to the university just to see Nixxxie with the excuse to see his sister. Jiang Yuyan knew it and she always gave them a time alone to chat.

One day, Jiang Yang asked her for dinner together and she said yes. On the morning of the same day when they had dinner planned, Nixxxie and her mother were coming back from the garden of their residence to the living room just then Han Ju and Xi Cheng crossed their path. As usual, Nixxxie and Song Meilin avoided this mother and son but who could stop Xi Cheng from annoying others.

“Step-mother, how are you?” Xi Cheng asked while stepping towards them.

Song Meilin ignored him and stepped towards the staircase with Nixxxie. Seeing it, Xi Cheng spoke again shamelessly, “This is not done step-mother. Here I am trying to create a symbiotic relationship with you but you are the one who doesn’t want to live peacefully.”

Nixxxie stepped between her mother and him, “It’s sad for my mother that she had to have a symbiotic relationship with parasites for so long.”

Hearing it, Han Ju was angry but Xi Cheng stopped her from saying anything and said, “Seems like my little sister is getting brave these days as I had let you fly freely. Do I need to cut your wings?”

Before Nixxxie could answer him, Song Meilin held her hand to stop her and said calmly, “Soon you will see, whose wings are going to get cut.”

“Ohh! Now my step-mother is talking back too. I wonder from where this courage is coming from? Is it Lu Qiang or that doctor?” He said while Han Ju was a little surprised to hear this as she was not aware of anything that was going on.

“Instead of thinking this, just think about yours and your mother’s future,” Song Meilin replied calmly but from inside she was burning with anger.

“I don’t need to think about it as I can write everyone’s future right at this moment, just like I wrote mine a few years back.”

Xi Cheng was referring to how he killed Xi Guo to secure his own future.

Hearing it, Song Meilin was about to lose her calm. Nixxie sensed it and said before her mother could say anything, "Let's go, mother. Such arguments are not good for your health."

"My sister is right. you should go back and rest, step-mother and let me handle things," Xi Cheng said with an evil smirk on his face, knowing how he touched the hurtful topic.

"Soon I will write your future Xi Cheng," Song Meilin said but her breathing was getting heavier as this talk was stressful for her. Nixxie felt worried about her mother and insisted to go back to her room. "Mother let's go" she turned to look at Xi Cheng and said, "Stay away from our sights as it makes my mother sick or it won't be any good for you."

Nixxie's sight and her words were cold and she looked different. She never talked to Xi Cheng like this before and that surprised him and his mother.

Just then a voice disturbed them, "What's going on here?" Xi Guiren was coming downstairs and he sensed something was going between these people.

"Nothing father we are talking about our bright futures," Xi Cheng replied.

Xi Guiren looked at his wife and noticing she was not feeling well, he said looking at his daughter, "Nixxie, take your mother back to her room."

Nixxie nodded and took Song Meilin away. Once these two ladies went upstairs, Xi Guiren spoke, "Both of you stay away from Song Meilin for some time as you can see she is not well."

"Honey we were just trying to talk to her nicely but she doesn't want to accept us." Han Ju replied trying to show herself and her son right.

"If she doesn't want to, then leave her alone," Xi Guiren spoke coldly that made Han Ju quiet. Though she was one cunning woman, she always preferred to be quiet in front of Xi Guiren.

“Father we just want us all to live in peace,” Xi Cheng replied not paying attention to how serious his father was.

Xi Guiren looked at his son with a cold gaze and said, “Knowing what happened in the past, do you think it is even possible?”



## 342 Xi Guiren's Regret...

"I am sad about it too father but now I just want my step-mother to be happy," Xi Cheng said not expecting his father to say something harsh after it.

"The person who gives one pain for life doesn't have a right to ask for it," Xi Cheng replied coldly to look into Xi Cheng's eyes that made Xi Cheng shut his mouth."

"Honey..." Han Ju tried to speak.

"I don't want to hear anything. Leave her alone and this is my last warning." Saying it, Xi Guiren left, leaving these two speechless.

Xi Guiren always preferred to ignore the things in the past but it was the first time he directly blamed his son for the past. Though he knew, what Xi Cheng did, he never showed it openly but this time he couldn't control as slowly his patience was wearing with sly behavior of his son and his mistress.

Looking at the retreating back of Xi Guiren, Han Ju said, "Seems like, your father is soon going to be on their side. You should be careful son."

Xi Cheng had no expression on his face and said, "Don't worry mother. Your son is ready for that day." He looked like had a plan in his mind as he gave out an evil grin.

"Good to know about it, son."

Xi Guiren came out of the mansion to go out. When he sat in his car, he looked sad. He closed his eyes and started to remember how things ended up like this. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

When Xi Guiren was young, he was ambitious and wanted to be a businessman. He was from one middle-class family but he always dreamed to fly higher in life and leave his middle-class life behind. Being a talented man, it didn't take him much time

to start his small business and to come in contact with famous businessmen.

He got in contact with Song Mingue, a famous businessman at that time and Song Meilin's father. Song Mingue found Xi Cheng a promising young man who could be a better businessman and supported him.

At that time, after completing business management studies, Song Meilin started to help her father in business as being an only child she had to do it. Soon she came in contact with Xi Guiren through business things and both started to get attracted to each other. Xi Guiren liked her as a woman but his other intention was to get a fortune she was going to inherit in the future.

Before meeting Song Meilin, Xi Guiren was in love with Han Ju, whom he met in one pub where she worked as an attendant. Han Ju was one really pretty woman to get the attention of any man around there but she never went to anyone except for Xi Guiren.

When Xi Guiren decided to marry Song Meilin, Han Ju was already carrying their child and she didn't want to abort it. Xi Guiren let her have a child but on the condition that he will never marry her but he will look after her and their son till the end.

Not wanting to let go of her love, Han Ju agreed to it and saw her man getting married to someone else. She was hurt but decided to stay strong for the sake of her son. Also, she knew, once Xi Guiren would be rich, she would be rich and her son's future would be secure too.

Song Mingue opposed her daughter to get married to Xi Guiren as he somewhat got to know his true intentions but he had to give up in front of her daughter's wish. Once they were married, everything went well till the next few years until one day Xi Guiren brought Han Ju and Xi Cheng home. At that time, Xi Guo was just five year old and Nixxie was a newborn child while Xi Cheng was thirteen years old.

Song Meilin was heartbroken but accepted them out of pity. Xi Guiren never planned to bring his mistress and son to their

home but he had to as Han Ju wanted their son to have a nice life while leaving with a family, especially with his father. Also, Xi Cheng was getting older and Xi Guiren didn't like his elder son to live the life of an illegal child so he decided to make up for it by covering it with money and letting him live with him.

Xi Guiren was greedy for money and power when he decided to marry Song Meilin but he somewhere loved her too as she was his lawfully wedded wife and mother of his two kids. He never expected something like this to happen in their lives and expected to live together in peace with wife mistress and their kids. He was grateful to Song Meilin for accepting his mistress and son and wanted that mother and son to be thankful towards her but things took a different turn.

Bringing his mistress and a son to his home was the biggest mistake of his life but he couldn't do anything but turn a blind eye to it for the sake of to protect what he had left.

Remembering all those things especially his dead son and memories he had with him, tears rolled down his cheek and he said, "I am sorry, my son. I am a bad father."

Not just to his son but he was apologetic towards Song Meilin too but he never dared to say it to her as he knew, she would never accept it. He accepted her coldness towards him as she was right. How could she forgive her husband when he was the reason that she lost her son. If he never brought his mistress in their home, things would have been different.

Also, when she came to Xi Guiren blaming Xi Cheng and his mistress for the death of her son, he had no other choice but to say he trust them even though he was aware of what his mistress and son did.

## 343 Dinner Date...

Same-day in the evening, Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

Nixxie was excited to go on a dinner with Jiang Yang but she was hesitant to ask her mother for her permission. In an hour he was going to be there to pick her up and time was moving faster. Gathering some courage, she went to her mother's room and saw Song Meilin was sitting on her bed, resting back at the headrest while reading a book.

Seeing her daughter, she said without giving her a chance to speak, "What are you doing here instead of getting ready to go out for a dinner?"

Nixxie was stunned to hear it. There she was worried about how to tell her mother and here her mother was saying this. She was not able to say a single word as to know what to feel about it, should she feel happy that her mother was fine with letting her go or should she feel embarrassed that her mother was already aware of it. but how?

"Doctor Jiang Yang called me to get permission from me to take you out for dinner and I already said Yes." Song Meilin said again to answer her daughter's question which she didn't ask.

"M-Mother I..."

"Don't waste your time here and go hurry up. He will be here in an hour," Song Meilin said as she knew what was going on in her daughter's mind but she didn't want her to waste her time and wanted her to get ready nicely.

Nixxie nodded, "Thank you, mother."

"Wear the dress I gifted you on your last birthday and get ready like a lady," saying it, Song Meilin focused on her book again and had a pleasant smile on her face.

Nixxie left her mother's room to go to her own room. Opening a wardrobe, Nixxie pulled out a dress from her wardrobe, the one her mother asked her to wear. While standing in front of the mirror holding a dress in her hand she was looking at herself from head to toe and at the same time, she was looking at the dress.

Remembering the words of her mother 'Get ready like a lady' she was thinking about how she dressed up always was so unlike a delicate and pretty girl. After her brother's death and during these few years, she almost forgot how to be like a lady but at the same time, she thought, how a man like Jiang Yang can like her when he is so handsome and he can get any pretty girl out there.

Going through all these thoughts, she started to get ready in a hurry before Jiang Yang could reach to pick her up.

In Jiang residence.

Jiang Yang was ready for his dinner date in his grey suit. He was standing in front of a mirror observing everything carefully from head to toe.

"I was never this worried about these things whenever I went out with other girls in the past but this one is making me feel nervous." Closing his eyes he gave out a deep sigh and said, "Calm down doctor Jiang Yang, as usual you are looking really handsome." saying it he patted his chest on the left side, "And you buddy, control yourself from jumping out of my chest when you will see her, got it?"

He picked up his mobile, wallet, car keys and left to get her. When he reached Xi residence, Jiang Yang stopped outside of the gate and called Nixxie. He didn't prefer to go inside as for him it was a waste of time because he planned to spend every moment only with her so he preferred to take away from there as soon as possible.

Nixxie went to her mother. Song Meilin was happy to see how pretty her daughter looked, "You are looking so pretty that I am sure doctor Jiang Yang will ask you for more of such dinners."

Nixxie blushed to hear it and said, "He is here so I should leave now."

"Right! Go and take your time as you are going out after a long time. I am sure doctor Jiang Yang will send you safe and sound back to me." Saying it, Song Meilin hugged Nixxie, "Have fun."

Nixxie went downstairs and just then Xi Cheng came out to the living room. "Little sister," he called her.

Hearing him, Nixxie stopped and looked at him. She was surprised to see him home at this hour and so early. Her heart started pounding faster as to think about what he will do after knowing she was going out with a man.

"You are looking really pretty. I hope you will enjoy your date with doctor Jiang Yang." Xi Cheng said stepping towards her and stopped exactly in front of her."

Nixxie gulped with her eyes wide open. She realized, she can't hide anything from this man but before she could say anything he spoke again, "I know you are pretty but today you are looking exceptionally beautiful."

She didn't know what to say and he continued speaking. Observing her carefully from head to toe he said while giving out a deep sigh, "It's sad that you took so much effort to get ready for another man. I regret that I am your brother." He had a mischievous smile on his face and his eyes looked different like he was a stranger to her but not her brother.

Nixxie stepped back to see him like this while Xi Cheng was enjoying to see her like this.

Having an evil grin on his lips, Xi Cheng asked, "Are you scared of me, little sister. Hmm! My fault as I never showed you my other side that knows how to care and how to love a woman."

This time his words had a different meaning that scared her even more. She couldn't say a single word and turned in a hurry to run outside of the home and away from the evil man in front of her.

Looking at her retreating back, he said, “Looks like I scared a poor girl.”

## 344 Pretty Nixxie...

“Looks like I scared a poor girl,” XiChengg said with a mischievous smile on his lips while looking at the retreating back of the Nixxie.

Han Ju was observing the whole scene from afar and the moment Nixxie left, she went to her son. “Come with me.”

Xi Cheng obediently followed his mother to her room. Entering the room, Han Ju made sure to close the door of her room and said while standing in front of him with a serious expression on her face, “What were you trying to do there?”

“You mean with my step-sister?” He asked.

“Hmm!” Han Ju nodded

“I was just talking to my little sister. Can’t I do that?” Xi Cheng asked casually.

“Little sister huh? Do you think your mother is a fool?” Han Ju looked really upset with her son.

“You are getting it wrong, mother,” he tried to clarify.

“I am not getting anything wrong as I can see the way you keep looking at her when no one is around.” Han Ju said, making him speechless for a moment.

Xi Cheng gave out a deep sigh and said, “I was just teasing her, mother.”

“Remember one thing, I can tolerate anything you do but not this. Even if you are my son, I can see you as a murderer but not the one who will force himself on a woman or disrespect them.” Han Ju was not ready to let it slide.

In the past Han Ju had gone through a struggle and she was aware of the way how men treat the women when they are powerless and hated it the most. Other than the good future for her only son, it was one of the reasons for her greed for money and power as she never wanted to be treated like that ever again in her life.



“Mother, your son can be the worst man in the world but he can’t fall so low in his life to do something like this to any woman even if she is my enemy.” These words from Xi Cheng were genuine and he meant it.

“So take her out from your brain as you know...”

Xi Cheng spoke before his mother could say anything further, “Rest assure mother. My sister is pretty so it’s normal for any man to look at her like this but she is still my sister and I won’t ever forget it. I won’t hesitate to kill her for my benefit but I won’t harm her in other ways. It was just to scare her as she was going on a date. How can I see her happy and not spoil her happy moment?”

Stepping towards the chair in her room, she said, “I hope you won’t disappoint me.”

“Mother, don’t think too much. Just keep in mind that nothing is more important for me than money and power,” He said to assure his mother.

Han Ju sat in the chair and said, “Good to know it and instead of me, you should keep it in your mind that nothing should be important for you more than what you have now after so much effort.”

“Okay, mother. I will remember it. I will take leave now.” “Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

Han Ju nodded and closed her eyes to rest in a chair while Xi Cheng left the room.

Stepping faster, Nixxxie reached the gate but she stopped and tried to relax, inhaling deeply a few more times so that Jiang Yang won’t be able to sense that something was wrong with her. Through the huge iron gate, Nixxxie saw Jiang Yang was standing outside of the car while resting his back to the door of the car with both hands tucked in his pant’s pockets.

For her, he was the most handsome man in the world. In that grey suit, he looked exceptionally handsome. She found him attractive even in his doctor’s white apron but what she was

watching right now was something that made her heart beat faster.

Seeing him, Nixxxie felt relieved and forgot what happened just a while ago. Having a pleasant smile on her face, she stepped towards him. Jiang Yang's sight moved towards the gate as he heard the sound of the gate being opened and he saw Nixxxie coming towards him.

The moment Jiang Yang's sight fell on her, he couldn't move it for even a single moment. She looked totally different from her usual self and it was surprising for him. He always saw her in not so feminine clothes as she always preferred to wear a simple top with jeans and shoes but he liked her the way she was.

Nixxxie never wore makeup but that day she had it. Her hair, that she always tied in a ponytail, she left them open, parted on one side and few strands of hair falling in front of her both shoulders. She even wore a tiny diamond hairpin to secure front hair on one side.

Jiang Yang started to observe her head to toe, not wanting to miss any detail about her changed look.

She was wearing an A-line scoop knee-length sleeveless white tulle dress. The top part of the dress had multicolor flower embroidery till her waist with multicolor beads on them while from her waist to her knees, it was all white tulle cloth that went along with her fair and delicate skin.

Instead of shoes, she was wearing white sandals with high heels and her feet looked pretty in it. Other than having makeup on her face, her nails were painted and that was the one more change. That tomboy Nixxxie was nowhere to be seen and Jiang Yang was not getting enough of her beauty.

When Nixxxie reached in front of him, Jiang Yang was still staring at her that made her feel uneasy. She made a sound as clearing a throat that brought him back to his senses.

Exhaling out from his mouth, Jiang Yang said while looking into her pretty and bright eyes, "I didn't know you were

planning to give me a heart attack with your beauty. Thank go  
I am a cardiologist and I know how to take care of my heart.”

# 345 Beautiful And Romantic...

Exhaling out from his mouth, Jiang Yang said, “I didn’t know you were planning to give me a heart attack with your beauty.”

Nixxie smiled to hear it and just then Jiang Yang noticed the tiny beads of sweat across the hairline of her forehead and asked, “Why are you sweating? Did you come here running?”

She was startled to hear it and checked her forehead as Jiang Yang was looking at it. “Sweating? Where? It must be because of the weather,” she replied.

“Weather? Now it’s going to be a start of winter and it’s not hot,” he said, not believing her words. He could see how anxious she was hearing his question.

“My body is weird. I feel hot even in winter,” she replied not looking at him. As it was a lie, she didn’t dare to look at him.

“Really?” Jiang Yang could see. She was trying to cover something so he didn’t ask her anything as he didn’t want to spoil the moment and said, “It’s good news then. In winter I feel like I will die because of the cold weather so you would be of great help.”

Looking at her she asked, “Me?”

Jiang Yang smiled teasingly and said, “Ohh! So you want me to explain how? It’s simple. See, in winter you and me.....”

“I..I got it. We should go now.” Sensing what he was going to say, Nixxie stopped him and looked in another direction as she was blushing. She was getting used to his bold words and liked it too. He was like a ray of happiness in her sad life that always made her smile. Also, she wanted to rake him away from her home as soon as possible.

Jiang Yang had a smile on his face too and opened the door of a car for her to sit inside. Starting his car, they went to the destination he planned to go to.

“Where are we going?” she asked.

“Nearby.” He didn’t explain her and Nixxxie too didn’t ask him further.

Lu Qiang was sitting in his office even if it was an evening. In the past few months, he ignored a work so he had to make up for it. He decided to call Jiang Yuyan as he was free for a bit.

Jiang was already aware of he was going to be late so she didn’t bother to call him and disturb him while working and waited for him to return home. while standing in a gallery, when she was thinking about him, she was happy to see her cellphone ringing with his name flashing on it.

As she received the call and said hello. Lu Qiang spoke, “Were you missing me?”

“Hmm!”

Giving out a deep sigh, as he was very tired, he said, “Sorry for not being able to give you time these days.”

“I can understand.”

“Thank you and I will make for it once I am done with my work in few days,” he said.

“I will be waiting,” she said with a smile. after chatting for a while, Lu Qiang hung up the call and the next moment he got a call from San Zemin. seeing his number, Lu Qiang felt worried and received it, “Tell me.”

“Mr. Jiang Yang and Ms. Nixxxie both left Xi Residence,” San Zemin replied.

“Hmm! and what about him?” Lu Qiang asked and he was referring to Xi Cheng.

“He was home and seems like he knows she was going out,” San Zemin replied.

“Nothing surprise. Just keep eys on them as I am sure he won’t let go of a chance to spoil the things.”“Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

“My man is there. Rest assured,” San Zemin assured him.

In some time, both Jiang Yang and Nixxxie reached one of the famous restaurants in the city and it was on the top floor of one of the tallest towers. From that restaurant, one could see the whole city down there with the beautiful view of a river passing through the city.

The table that Jiang Yang booked was not inside the closed place of the restaurant but at the outside in open space where one could enjoy the cool breeze passing. When they entered the restaurant, an attendant welcomed them and took them to the booked table.

“This place is so beautiful,” Nixxxie said while looking at the view downside where the whole city was shining like stars in a dark sky in the night.

The lights everywhere were making it glittering and looking attractive. When she was staring towards the city while sitting in a chair, Jiang Yang was staring at her and mumbled to himself, “Not as much as you.”

“Huh? Did you say something?” nixxxie heard him saying something but couldn’t hear what exactly.

“I said, beautiful and romantic too,” Jiang Yang said that made Nixxxie blushed.

All this time Jiang Yang’s eyes were seeking to take a glance at her, each moment, forgetting what was going around. If he could, he would have continued staring at her for the whole night without blinking even once.

It was a perfectly planned dinner that both were enjoying while having a chat. Jiang Yang was trying to know her better as what kind of a person she is and what she liked or disliked. Jiang Yang told her about himself too that she asked about. They shared happy memories from their childhood days but both didn’t say anything about the sad part of their past.

While having dinner and chatting for a while, Nixxxie rubbed her arms as she was feeling cold. It was obvious as they were sitting in the open dining area of a restaurant from where they could see the beautiful view of the city down there.

Seeing her, feeling cold, Jiang Yang smiled and said, “While ago someone just said that her body is hot in cold weather.”

Nixxie got what he was referring to and didn't know what to say. Just then, Jiang Yang got up from the chair and taking off his suit jacket, he covered her by putting it on her shoulder from the back. He adjusted the jacket so that it won't fall down from her shoulders. Once he was done, he went back and sat in his chair.

## 346 His Warmth...

When Jiang Yang got up from the chair, Nixxxie was busy rubbing her arms. She was surprised to feel the sudden warmth around her. She looked up and Jiang Yang was there. She couldn't say no to what he was doing as that sudden warmth she felt from his jacket, she liked it. It was the warmth of his body that she felt in the jacket. When Jiang Yang was adjusting the jacket properly, she was blushing. Jiang Yang noticed it and it brought a smile to his face too.

When Jiang Yang sat back in his chair, she asked, "Are you not feeling cold?"

"As today your body is acting opposite so mine is like that too. Instead of feeling cold, I'm feeling hot. You can feel how hot I am through the warmth of that jacket." He said while pointing towards the jacket around her

Nixxxie blushed again to hear it as it was what she was thinking a while ago and both knew about it. Once the dinner was done, both went near the railing of the restaurant and stood there looking at the sky and the city.

Even though Nixxxie was covered in a jacket, she was still feeling a cold with the cold breeze passing across them while Jiang Yang was standing normally with his hands tucked in pant pockets, looking at the view like he was not feeling cold at all.

"Are you not feeling cold?" Nixxxie asked to look at him.

"Not much. It's bearable." Jiang Yang answered.

"I am alright now so you can take this jacket." saying it she was about to take off the jacket but he stopped her and said, "There is another way I can feel hot and cold won't affect me."

"Huh?"

Jiang Yang moved to stand behind her and stood there while surrounding his hands around her while resting his chin on her



shoulder and said, “Now it’s better.”

Nixxxie startled with this but she liked it and smiled. Jiang Yang could sense that she was smiling and held her a bit tighter and said, “This is even better.”

Both stood there for a while and Jiang Yang said, “Let’s go or you will catch a cold.”

Saying it, both left to go out of the restaurant. Nixxxie wanted to visit a washroom and excused herself. She went to the washroom and Jiang Yang waited for her. When Nixxxie came out of the washroom and went towards Jiang Yang who was talking to the manager of the restaurant. The manager knew Jiang Yang because he had treated his father a few days back.

While going towards him, Nixxxie was observing Jiang Yang that how nicely he was talking to a manager while smiling and that manager looked happy too. Jiang Yang was a very polite person too. He always talked to everyone nicely and never mattered to him whoever the person was.

Nixxxie found him amusing as to think about how can he make everyone comfortable around him and make them smile. He was a really easy-going person. She realized, she always forgot all her worries just being with him and he never had to do anything special. His presence was enough to do everything.

She was so immersed in her thoughts that she couldn’t see the waiter coming from the other side, holding a tray, having glasses filled with drinks in them. In a moment both bumped into each other and Nixxxie’s dress was drenched in liquor from the glass. Nixxxie and the waiter both were startled to realize what had just happened and the sound of glass breaking attracted everyone’s attention towards them.

Jiang Yang stepped towards her in a hurry and asked, “Are you okay?” “Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

“I..I am sorry Miss. I...” The waiter was scared to see what he just did.

“Can’t you work properly?” A manager was angry at the waiter but suddenly Nixxxie said, “No, it was my fault.”

Jiang Yang looked at the manager and said, “It’s ok, nothing to be worried about.”

Giving out a sigh of relief, the manager said, “Sir, why don’t you take Miss to get freshen up in one of the rooms for our guest and till then I will arrange something for her.”

Jiang Yang agreed and the manager asked one of the female attendants to take both of them towards the room and instructed her with few things.

The lady attendant led their way to one of the VIP rooms and both followed her while Jiang Yang holding Nixxxie’s hand.

All the time Nixxxie was looking at her hand that was held by him and forgot that she was drenched in alcohol. The only thing she could feel was the warmth of his palm that gave her goosebumps.

Jiang Yang was busy following the attendant as he was worried about Nixxxie because she was drenched and just a while ago she was feeling cold. He wanted her to get dry clothes as soon as possible.

Once they reached the room, the attendant said, “Sir, here is the key. You can get Miss to freshen up and in no time I will arrange a fresh set of clothes for her.”

Jiang Yang nodded and accepted the key from her. The attendant left and Jiang Yang unlocked the door of the room. They entered inside the room but still, Jiang Yang was holding her hand not realizing that there was no need.

Nixxxie was looking at her hand and Jiang Yang realized he was still holding her hand when he noticed her sight. Jiang Yang looked around the room and moved towards the door of a bathroom. He still didn’t let go of her hand as more than anything he was worried about her.

Once they went inside a bathroom, Jiang Yang finally let go of her hand and looked around in a luxurious and huge bathroom. He saw what he was looking for. There were fresh towels and

a bathrobe too. He turned to look at her who was busy in looking at her hand which he was holding for a long time.

## 347 Something Is Wrong With My Heart.

“Nixxxxie!” Jiang Yang called her and she looked at him.

“Get freshen up and change into it. Soon another set of clothes would be here for you,” he said while signaling towards the white bathrobe into the shelf of the bathroom.

“Nixxxxie nodded and Jiang Yang left the bathroom. He was standing near the window of the room, looking outside, waiting for her to come out. Suddenly he pulled out his hands from his pant pocket and looked at it. He was smiling to remember her reaction when he was holding her hand, how she was staring at their hands all this time.

Time passed by but neither Nixxxxie and nor the attendant came into the room. Jiang Yang knocked on the door of a bathroom and asked, “Are you okay, Nixxxxie?”

“Yes, I am.” he immediately got a response from inside.

“Then why are you not coming out? You should not stay there for long,” he asked worriedly.

“I am in a bathrobe,” she replied.

“Then?” he asked not knowing what she was worried about.

“I will wait till I get the clothes. That attendant will come soon.” She was feeling awkward to go in front of him in a bathrobe.

“Are you planning to fall sick? You were already feeling cold. Come out it’s fine,” he said as he was ordering her and she had to listen to him.

Finally, Nixxxxie came out while feeling awkward in front of him wearing just a bathrobe. She was covered completely, but still, it was embarrassing for her.”

Jiang Yang saw her and he realized, she was feeling cold. He didn’t pay attention to that she was feeling awkward or what

and held her hand to take her towards the bed. Adjusting the pillows on the bed towards the headrest, he signaled her to sit on a bed and Nixxxie obeyed. She was sitting in a bed while resting her back to the headboard and Jiang Yang covered her with a blanket then adjusted the temperature in the room.

“Thank You,” Nixxxie said feeling overwhelmed with the care she was getting from him.

“You don’t need to as you are my responsibility now,” He said and sat on the edge of the bed.

“Huh?” she was startled to hear so Jiang Yang said again, “As I am the one to take you out with me then obviously looking after you is my responsibility. Isn’t it?”

“Hmm!” she nodded.

“But I don’t mind to take your responsibility for whole life,” he said again. It was as if the indirect confession he made. He was staring at her to get her reaction.

Nixxxie gulped to hear it and looked at him with her eyes wide opened but before both of them could say anything, the bell in the room rang.

Jiang Yang opened the door. That was the attendant who came back with clothes for Nixxxie. “Sorry for keeping you waiting, sir. Here are the clothes for Miss and her clothes I will Make sure to send them to your address after getting them clean.”

“Thank you,” saying it, Jiang Yang closed the door and went back to Nixxxie. She was already out of the bed seeing the attendant there with the clothes. She wanted to change that bathrobe as soon as possible so she was in a hurry to get those clothes.

“Here are your clothes.” Jiang Yang handed her over a bag of clothes and she went to the bathroom.

Once she was done, she came out. It was a pink color simple but elegant lace ruffle dress, long enough till her knees with long lace sleeves and round neck. In this simple dress too, she was looking amazingly pretty and Jiang Yang couldn’t take off his sight away from her.

Seeing him smiling, Nixxxie asked while adjusting her dress awkwardly, “Is anything wrong?”

“Yes!” he replied while looking into her eyes. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

She looked down towards her dress to check it and asked, “What?”

“Something is wrong with my heart as you never miss making my heart skip a beat,” He replied casually.

Hearing it, she didn’t know how to reply to his straight forward words and said, “I think we should leave now.” Saying it she stepped in the direction of the door but Jiang Yang pulled her back by holding her hand.

With just a simple tug she was standing closer while facing him. She was startled with his action but before she could react he said, “How can our date end without a kiss?”

“Date?” she asked.

“Hmm! Date.” he nodded and said while looking into her eyes and holding her close to him by holding her waist, “Though we came out for just a dinner, we did everything that couple does. Don’t you think so?”

Saying it he pulled her even closer, leaving not an inch of space between them. Her hands were resting on his chest as and she was looking into his eyes.

Jiang moved his face closer to her that made her feel that he was going to kiss her but instead he moved to her ears and said in a very low voice, “Tell me it was not a date and I will let you go without a kiss.”

Nixxxie didn’t say it and lowered her sight. Jiang Yang got his answer and said, “Look at me.”

She looked at him with her heart beating faster. She knew what was going to happen and she was ready for it. In her heart, she knew, he was not the only one feeling in that way, she wanted it too.

Jiang Yang moved his one hand from her waist to her neck and stopped it on a side of her cheek. He caressed her cheek with a thumb and moved his face closer to kiss her.

The next moment, their lips met and Jiang Yang kissed her slowly and gently, sucking and nibbling her both lips, not being in a rush. With her eyes closed, This time Nixxie responded to his kiss and Jiang Yang felt happy to realize it. She forgot everything and decided to live in the moment.

# 348 Where Were You Till Now?

Slowly Jiang Yang's hand moved to the back of her neck to hold her tight at a place and soon that slow and gentle kiss turned into a passionate one. Jiang Yang had already kissed her twice but it was always a simple delicate kiss because he didn't want to scare her but this time, he took a step forward and slipped his tongue into her cavern.

Nixxie was shocked by this and opened her eyes to look at him. Jiang Yang stopped and looked at her to see what happened, though he was aware of what it was about.

She was panting heavily while looking at him with her moist eyes. Jiang Yang loosened the grip of his hand on the back of her head and asked while wiping her moist lips with his thumb, "You didn't like it?"

She shook her head. "It's not that. It... was... so... sudden," she replied while moving her sight away from him and her last words were broken.

Jiang Yang couldn't help but smiled widely and didn't know what to say. He felt like to laugh at her innocent behavior but at the same time, he was aware that it was her first time experiencing these things.

That cold looking Nixxie and this innocent girl standing in front of him were worlds apart and he was falling for her even more.

"I can understand. It's fine. We can leave now," he said not wanting to do anything that she won't like.

Hearing it she exclaimed, "No!" Realizing her own sudden reaction she said in a low voice, "I.. Didn't... mean to leave." She was embarrassed to realize what she said and gulped. It was her indirect approval to him.



Jiang Yang smiled again as to understand her. Without saying a single word, he moved closer to her. Lifting her head to look at him, he kissed her again. This time he straightaway did where he had to stop moments before.

He slipped his tongue in her mouth and started to taste her while rolling his tongue with hers. Nixxxie was responding to him back. At first, it was not that easy but soon she adjusted herself and moreover, Jiang Yang was making it easy for her not making it in a hurry. He was giving her a chance to make her move instead of being greedy like a hungry wolf.

They couldn't realize that passion was taking over them. His hand that was resting on her back, started to move along her back, clutching her skin in his palm through her dress, holding her even tightly pressing her body against his. The hand that was behind her neck moved upward towards the back of her head and he started to move his fingers in her soft shiny hair.

Her hands, those were resting on his chest, soon circled around his neck and both forgot all hesitations they were feeling before. It was as if both wanted the same thing and didn't want to stop.

In a while, Jiang Yang had to stop as he could realize, Nixxxie was short for breath. Her face was red and she was trying to inhale as much as air, she could get inside her lungs. He loosened his grip around her to allow her to breathe and said, "Seems like your lungs have a low capacity."

Inhaling deeply, she replied, "My lungs are fine but the man in front of me sucked all the air out of me."

Her bold reply surprised him and he asked, "Where were you till now?"

"Huh? What kind of a question is this?" she asked.

"I mean, that Nixxxe who could shut my mouth with her words, where was she?" He asked.

Nixxxie understood what he was talking about. Whenever they met outside of the university at the start of the semester, she was the one who never left any chance to shut his mouth with

her replies but since they met as a doctor and a relative of a patient, Nixxxie was being reserved.

She stood silent and Jiang Yang pulled her towards him. “Do you have any idea how much I missed this Nixxxie?” he said looking into her eyes.

“No one like that Nixxxie,” she replied looking back into his eyes.

“But I do. Be like that always at least for me,” He said while caressing her cheeks with a love and taking a closer look at her pretty face.

“You like it when I am cold to you and reply to you rudely?” she asked curiously.

“I like you in every way but you were the only girl who was able to shut my mouth with her words so that added to it,” he replied.

She smiled to hear it but before she could think or talk about anything, Jiang Yang spoke again, “When you are short for words to shut my mouth, you can use this way too.”

“Huh?”

Seeing her questioning expressions, Jiang Yang kissed her for a moment and said after parting away, “I am talking about this way.”

She blushed and continued looking at him thinking instead of finding her rude and cold he was liking that side of her. The reason for her being like that was to keep everyone away from her but with Jiang Yang, the exact opposite thing happened and instead, he liked her. She couldn't help but think ‘What kind of man is this?’

“One of a kind.” He answered to what she was thinking and it surprised her and thought, ‘How can he know what I am thinking?’

“Because I am a very smart doctor,” He again answered her unspoken question. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

Hearing it, Nixxie shook her head and decided not to think about anything. Jiang Yang let her go and said, "We should leave now. It's late and your mother must be worried about you."

While heading towards the door, Nixxie nodded and smiled too so Jiang Yang asked, "What happened?"

"Instead of worrying about me, my mother asked me to take time and not be in a hurry to come back home," She replied.

## 349 Sudden Attack...

“Instead of worrying about me, my mother asked me to take time and not be in a hurry to come back home,” Nixxxie said.

“I told you, your mother is as cool as my mother,” Jiang Yang said.

Nixxxie nodded and said, “Might be but I think it’s because she trusts you.”

“Ohh! That’s good news.”

“Why?” she asked.

“After this, I can take you out whenever I want,” Jiang Yang replied. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

Talking like this both entered the elevator where one man wearing a completely black dress was already present. He was wearing a long black jacket and a cap. Both were talking not minding to him.

Slowly they started to get comfortable with each other especially Nixxxie who was being reserved before. Being reserved was not her fault as the conditions around her were not normal but Jiang Yang didn’t fail to work his charm on her and made her comfortable with him.

“Do you remember the elevator in the hospital?” Jiang Yang asked teasingly to remind her of the kiss in the elevator.

“Cough!” Her face was flushed.

Seeing her like this, he smiled and said, “I am sure you do.”

Talking and teasing, both reached the parking floor and stepped out of the lift. The man accompanying them in the elevator stepped out too.

At the same time at Xi residence.

Xi Cheng was talking to someone on his cellphone, in his study room while sitting in his chair behind his work table. He had evil expressions on his face when he was talking to the person on the other line.

“I think I don’t have to remind you what exactly to do. Just make it look like the incident from the past playing live in front of her eyes once again.” Xi Cheng said.

“Got it.” Saying it the man hung up the call.

Xi Cheng put his mobile on the table and leaned back in his chair with a mischievous smile on his face. Giving out a deep sigh he said, “Sorry little sister but I think it’s time for me to remind you of the hurtful past once again.” Saying it he closed his eyes. “Poor girl.”

Just as Jiang Yang and Nixxie reached the car, suddenly Jiang Yang made a sudden move by pulling Nixxie towards one side and there was a sound of glass breaking. Nixxie was stunned to realize what had just happened while Jiang Yang was normal.

In front of them, there was a man standing with a baseball bat in his hands and that made Nixxie shiver and sweat in fear. The man strode towards them again to hit them with a baseball bat but before he could even touch them, Jiang Yang pushed Nixxie to another side and in one swift move, he dodged the man’s move by twisting his hand that was holding a bat and stood behind him.

Jiang Yang pinned the man to the car beside and twisted his hand on his back side that made a sound of breaking of a bone. Jiang Yang was standing behind him while holding that man’s hand to twist it on his back and with his other hand he pressed the man against the car.

“Ahhh!” The man cried in pain but Jiang Yang didn’t show any mercy on him and said, “Now you won’t be able to use this for at least a few more months. Should I just break it and get rid of it?” saying it Jiang Yang twisted his hand gain.

“Ahhh!” the man cried.

“Gosh, I don’t understand why people like you take doctors for granted. Do we look that easy to bully? You idiot.” saying it Jiang Yang kicked the backside of his knee that made him whine in a pain and kneel on the ground while his face was brushing against the car.

The moment Jiang Yang and Nixxie entered the elevator that man was with them. When they stepped out he stepped out too. It was normal and both didn’t think about to happen something like this but after walking a certain distance, Jiang Yang realized the man was following them.

He was not that sure so he waited for the man to make a move and continued walking towards the car while holding Nixxie’s hand. Just as they reached the front of the car, the man pulled out a baseball bat from his bag and Jiang Yang saw it in the reflection of the windshield.

The moment that man was about to make his move, Jiang Yang pulled Nixxie with a strong tug and the bat hit the car that broke the window screen on the driver’s side. Nixxie was shocked to see it and couldn’t understand what happened.

The man was ready to hit them again but this time it was clear that whom he was targeting. He strode towards Jiang Yang to hit him but before he could be succeeded in his plan, Jiang Yang made him beg for mercy.

When Jiang Yang was dealing with the man he saw, Nixxie was standing with the support of a pillar beside. She looked so scared as if she had seen a ghost. He was about to let go of a man to go to her just then a man in a black suit came and said, “Sir, I will handle him.”

Jiang Yang looked at him questioningly so the man said again, “I am president Lu’s man.”

Hearing the name President Lu, Jiang Yang let go of that man to hand it over to the man in a black suit and went to Nixxie.

Jiang Yang held her by the shoulder and asked worriedly, “Are you okay, Nixxie? Are you hurt somewhere?”

Nixxie was so scared that she couldn’t say a single word. She was sweating all over while shivering in fear with her eyes

closed.

“Look at me, Nixxie.”

Nixxie looked at him with her teary eyes and said, “Brother Xi Guo.”

Jiang Yang looked at her not knowing what to say or what happened to her but before he could ask anything she went unconscious.

## 350 You Are Really Stubborn...

Jiang Yang immediately lifted Nixxie in his hands as knowing she must have got a shock from this incident, though he didn't know the exact reason. He looked at his car whose driver side window screen was broken. The man in the black suit came to him as he was done tying the man who tried to harm Jiang Yang.

“Sir you can take my car. It's there, the black one,” saying it he pointed towards the car standing exactly opposite to them on either side of the lane.

Both walked towards the car and the man in the black suit opened the door of the back passenger seat for Jiang Yang to put her inside as she was unconscious.

Handing over the keys of the car to Jiang Yang, the man in the black suit went back to deal with the culprit.

Jiang Yang started the car and decided to take Nixxie to the Jiang residence with him as he thought that is a safe place for her. Also, he didn't want to take her back to her home in this condition because Song Meilin would be worried seeing her daughter in this condition and knowing her bad health condition, he preferred not to take Nixxie to his home.

At the same time, this news reached to Lu Qiang and he was upset with this incident. He was still in his office while working late when San Zemin called him to inform about it.

“How can you be so careless San Zemin. What was your man doing when this happened. How come the things went these far?” Lu Qiang said with a displeased tone. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

“I am sorry, president Lu. I never expect Xi Cheng to do it but after watching the video of the incident from CCTV footage, I



can see that it was not meant to harm anyone. It was just to put on a show,” San Zemin replied.

“What do you mean?”

“If Xi Cheng really wanted to harm both of them, then he would have planned perfectly instead of sending just one man and taking things so lightly when it came to deal with the person from President Lu’s side.”

“I know he can’t dare to harm anyone dear to me but whatever it was I don’t want a single hair on his head to get hurt.” Lu Qiang ordered him.

“Seeing the situation, I think doctor Jiang Yang is not an easy person to deal with,” San Zemin said being a bit surprised with Jiang Yang’s fearless action.

“Really?” Lu Qiang was surprised to hear it, as well as happy.

Those were the words from San Zemin. It was as if he was praising Jiang Yang. It was rare to see him praising someone as he was a very strict person when it came to giving an opinion about anyone.

“Hmm! Trust me. You will know once you will see the tape,” San Zemin said it and Lu Qiang cut the call and just then there was a knock on the door of Lu Qiang’s office.

“Come in.” Lu Qiang was a bit surprised to see there was someone at this late hour as he had already sent Xiao Min back home.

The person entered inside and it surprised Lu Qiang. Before Lu Qiang could say anything the man said, “Don’t look at me like this. Are you that much happy to see me here?”

Lu Qiang came out of his surprised mode and said, “Can’t I be happy to see my brother?”

Sitting on the couch in the office, Lu Feng said, “Of course you can but right now I am here for our friend.”

“So you got the news?” Lu Qiang asked.

“What news?”

“Our dear friend being an action hero,” Lu Qiang replied.

“Jiang Yang? What did he do? I came here as I got to know that you are still in office so I thought it must be something related to Jiang Yang,” Lu Feng said being curious to know what Jiang Yang did.

Just then Lu Qiang received an e-mail with a video file attached to it. “Let me show you.” Saying it Lu Qiang went to the couch with his tab and sat beside Lu Feng. He played the video and both were stunned to see it.

“Ohh! Look at that move. When did this doctor learn to fight?” Lu Feng asked still carrying surprised expressions on his face.

“After that incident happened with Yuyan,” Lu Qiang replied.

“So not just Yuyan, he is a pro too,” Lu Feng said while smiling to see Jiang Yang fight.

“I guess so. These siblings never forget to amaze us,” Lu Qiang said.

Lu Feng leaned back on the sofa and said, “I wonder what else is hidden inside both of them?”

Lu Qiang kept a tab aside and said, “Not just both of them. You too have so much hidden inside and I want to know it.”

“You started again. Do you want me to go back?” Lu Feng said being ready to get up from the sofa.

Giving out a deep sigh, Lu Qiang said, “No. You are really stubborn.”

Lu Feng sat back on the sofa and said, “So you are. Give me something to drink. I am thirsty.”

As Lu Qiang got up from the sofa to bring something for him, Lu Feng spoke again, “Don’t bring water. Bring something that we call alcohol and this time give it in my hand.” He was referring to how Lu Qiang splashed water on his face when they were in Jiang residence.

Lu Qiang didn’t say anything and obeyed him as Lu Feng was the boss. He was happy to see Lu Feng in his office that he could have done anything that Lu Feng would have asked for.

Lu Qiang came back with a wine bottle and a glass in his hand.

“Only one glass,” Lu Feng asked.

“Anyways you won’t let me drink so what is the use to bring two glasses?” Lu Qiang replied and put the bottle and a glass on the center table.

“You are getting smarter,” Saying it Lu Feng poured wine for himself in the glass while Lu Qiang sat on the sofa.

## 351 Why Am I Here?

“How are both of them after that incident?” Lu Feng asked while drinking wine.

“San Zemin messaged me that he left with Nicky as she was unconscious because of the shock,” Lu Qiang replied.

“I know why that bastard did it. He tried to repeat the same incident in front of her just to scare her. San Zemin was right. He didn’t mean to harm them,” Lu Feng said.

Lu Qiang nodded, “Hmm! I know.”

“Jiang Yang must have taken her with him to Jiang residence. “Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

“That would be better. He can take care of her properly.”

“Hmm! Our friend is really amazing. He is not just better at annoying me but he is best at understanding and taking care of anyone,” Lu Feng said with a slight smile on his lips.

“That’s right. That moron is the only one of a kind and I am glad that we have him back in our lives. Since he is back, everything changed.” said Lu Qiang with a pleasant expression on his face.

Lu Feng agreed and continued drinking.

Jiang Yang reached to Jiang residence but before that on the way home, he called Song Meilin.

Song Meilin picked up a call. “Hello!”

“I called to inform you that Nixxie would be with me and I will drop her home tomorrow.” Jiang Yang straight away came to the point without any kind of hesitation.

Song Meilin didn’t know how to react to this. As a mother, how could she give him permission so she asked, “Can I talk to Nixxie?”

“She caught up a cold so she is sleeping right now,” he replied, not willing to tell her what exactly had happened.

With this answer from him, there was a silence on the Song Meilin’s side so Jiang Yang spoke again, “Mrs. Xi. I want you to trust me. I know she is your daughter and you are worried but trust me, I will bring her back safe and sound.”

His words sounded genuine to her. She knew he was a good person what kind of relationship he had with Lu Qiang but as a mother she was worried. She decided to trust him and said, “Okay!”

Jiang Yang gave out a sigh of relief and continued driving towards the Jiang residence. When they reached the parking lot, Jiang Yang carried her towards the elevator in his arms and seeing it, the security guard came to him to help him.

He called the elevator and went upstairs with them, in case Jiang Yang needed any help. The security guard knew he was a doctor so there was no need to be worried about it. Once they reached the floor, Jiang Yang said thank you to the guard and asked him to leave.

Jiang Yang unlocked the door by entering the password somehow with his hand that was still busy in carrying Nixxie. As they entered inside, Jiang Yang put her on the couch and checked her pulse. It was normal and he gave out a sigh of relief.

He went to the kitchen to drink water as he was exhausted to carry her home. While coming out, he brought one box with him that had medicines inside it.

Nixxie was gone through the shock that was what he thought and she needed sleep and to be calm. He injected her with medicine and took her upstairs to Yuyan’s room. Putting her on the bed, he realized, she was all sweaty and her dress was tight that could be uncomfortable for her so he decided to change her clothes. He pulled out a set of night pajama from Yuyan’s wardrobe for her to wear.

He was doing his job as a doctor and didn’t feel awkward to think of how he can change her clothes. He went to the

bathroom and brought water and a small towel to clean her up. He was about to pull out her dress but stopped to think that if she would be upset with it.

Thinking for a while he gave out a deep sigh and spoke to himself, "You are a doctor and it's nothing. Go ahead and do it."

He pulled out her dress and cleaned her but he was keeping his sight away from her as much as he could. Putting on the night pajama on her, he covered her with a quilt.

Making sure that she was comfortable, Jiang Yang slept on the couch.

The next morning, Nixxie woke up and saw she was in a new place. She got out of bed immediately and looked around in a room but there was no one. She noticed her clothes were changed and felt anxious and scared.

Immediately she strode towards the door and getting out of the room she looked around to see if someone was there. Seeing the empty space, she went to the stairs and with slow steps, she went downstairs but still there was no one. She was about to move towards the living room, a voice stopped her. "How are you feeling now, Nixxie?"

Nixxie turned to see and there was Jiang Yang standing at the door of the kitchen. "I was preparing breakfast for both of us. You were sleeping so I didn't wake you up. I hope you had a nice sleep."

"What is this place?" She asked.

"As you can see, this is a house and other than you, just I am here so it's obvious that it's my home," He replied.

"Why am I here?" she asked not knowing what to think about the situation. She was in his home and looked like she spent the night there. Her clothes were changed and he was even preparing breakfast for both of them.

"You went unconscious last night after that incident so I brought you here instead of taking you home as I thought your mother might feel worried to see you like this and it might

stress her out.” Saying it he stepped towards her from the door of the kitchen.

## 352 I Am Serious..

Hearing her mother's name, Nixxie forgot about an incident from the previous night and said, "Mother! I need to make a call. She must be worried about me."

"No need. I already informed her that you would be with me and I will send you home today." He replied casually, standing in front of her.

"What?" she exclaimed.

"Yes!" he replied calmly exactly opposite to her anxious behavior.

"W..What did she say?" She was worried about her mother more than what happened last night.

"She said okay," Jiang Yang replied.

Nixxie didn't know what to say and sat on the sofa while holding her head. "What might have she thought about me?"

"She will not think anything, Don't worry," saying it Jiang Yang sat on the sofa too.

While pressing down her temples, her sight fell on the dress she was wearing and asked, "When did I change into it?"

"Last night!" Jiang Yang answered and she looked at him with a questioning site, so he said again to answer her unspoken questions, "As a doctor, I did what was best for my patient. You sweated a lot and your dress was too tight so it might have troubled when you needed to breathe properly."

"But you..."

"I couldn't change it with my eyes closed but I tried to keep my sight away from you as much as possible only this much I can say," He said knowing what was she thinking and before she could ask anything further.

She was speechless with his direct reply and stayed silent so he said again, "No need to be embarrassed as one day we are



going to be together to cross these unnecessary barriers.”

“Huh?” she was stunned again.

“I am serious.” Jiang Yang looked as if he really meant it and it was not a lie. But before she could be in more shock, Jiang Yang spoke to ease the tension, “Go upstairs and get freshen up. That is Yuyan’s room where you were sleeping and there you will get everything that you want,” He said but she was not ready to move. She was still thinking about what he just said and repeated his words in her mind, ‘I am serious’.

“Come with me,” he said as ordering her and she had to listen to him so she stood up. He led her way back to Jiang Yuyan’s room and took her to the wardrobe. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

He pulled out one peach color knee-length dress for her and said, “This one will suit you,” saying it he handed that dress over to her. Later he went through the one more shelf, pulled out a set of undergarments for her and gave it to her.

Awkwardly she accepted it and went to the bathroom. Jiang Yang followed her to the bathroom and she stopped in her tracks to see why he was following her.

Seeing her scared, Jiang yang smiled and said, “Don’t worry I am not going to help you with shower, though I would like to do so.” Saying this, he went to the bathroom and brought a pack of toothbrushes and handed it over to her and left saying, “I will be waiting downstairs for breakfast.”

Soon Nixxie came downstairs and Jiang Yang was busy arranging breakfast for both of them. Seeing her, he smiled to welcome her and said, “I hope you are feeling good now.”

She nodded and he said again, “Sit, have breakfast then I will drop you home.”

Looking at the breakfast arranged on a dining table, she asked, “Have you prepared all this?”

“Hmm!” He nodded.

Both started to eat and Nixxxie found the food really tasty,  
“It’s tasty.”

“Thank you.” he smiled.

Both were eating breakfast silently, avoiding to talk about the incident from the previous night. Jiang Yang wanted to ask but decided to let her have food first and Nixxxie was immersed in her thoughts thinking why suddenly the similar thing from the past repeated and this time it was meant to harm Jiang Yang. When she realized it could harm Jiang Yang, the food choked in her throat.

“Cough-Cough!” she was shivering a bit.

Jiang Yang noticed it and passed her water. He was sitting just next to her so he could pat her back too. He knew it was not without any reason that she was like this but preferred to be silent.

Once she was calm, he asked, “Are you fine now?”

She nodded and started to eat but it was as if the food was not able to pass through her throat but she continued eating.

Breakfast was finished and both headed towards the living room leaving the stuff on the dining table to clean it by the servant.

Once they reach the living room, Nixxxie said, “Thank you for taking care of me last night.”

“You don’t need to.” both were silent so Jiang yang asked, “I want to know why you were so shocked last night and why you called out your brother’s name suddenly?”

“That is just.....”

Jiang Yang knew she was trying to avoid his question so he spoke again, “I know everything already but I want to know your side of the story that why were you so traumatized?”

She didn’t know where to start and sat on the sofa. Jiang Yang sat beside her and she started to narrate.

It was about the accident of my brother. The thing happened last night was similar to what happened with my brother. That

day when the incident happened, I witnessed it with my own eyes.” saying it tears started to roll down from her eyes. Jiang Yang held her hand and caressed it to calm her down.

She looked at him with her teary eyes and continued, That day it was brother Xi Guo’s birthday and he was going to see brother Lu Feng as they decide to celebrate it with their friends. All were adults and brother’s friends while I was a high school girl, so he didn’t take me with him but I desperately wanted to go with him.”

## 353 Blaming Herself...

“I decided to go there secretly so I hid in the back passenger seat of his car. I was so small so it was easy and because it was night, he didn’t notice that I was there. Once we reached the place where they planned to celebrate his birthday and my brother stepped out of the car, the person came out of the blue with a baseball bat and was about to hit my brother, but he sensed it and dodged it just like u did last night.”

Jiang Yang didn’t disturb her and continued listening but it looked like he was thinking about something serious having cold expressions on his face. It was rare to see Jiang Yang with cold expressions.

Nixxxie continued, “As my brother dodged it, the bat hit the window screen and broke it. The sound startled me and I screamed. Seeing me there, my brother was shocked. I screamed so he forgot about that man, he stepped towards me to check if I was okay but even before he could come to me, that man hit my brother on the head. He was in pain but still wanted to come to me.” Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

“I was scared and called my brother stepping out of the car but before I could reach him, the man threw my brother on the road where one car hit him. All of this happened so sudden in the blink of an eyes that no one could stop it.”

“I cursed myself for not being quick and being a kid. only if.....” her voice choked and Jiang Yang hugged while patting her back. She continued, “Only If I was not scared, only if I was not a kid, only if I was not there, my brother would have been alive as instead of coming to me, he had dealt with that man. I was the one to make him die.”

Jiang Yang didn’t say anything as no word was right to console her. She was feeling guilty for the things that were not in her hands and as a kid it was obvious for her to feel scared.

Seeing her own brother dying in front of her eyes was the worst thing could happen and blaming herself was obvious too. He let her cry while burying her face in his chest.

Once she was calm, she moved her head back and spoke, “At that moment, Brother Lu Feng arrived and when he went to my brother, he took his last breath in his hands. Later we found out that the man was sent by my father’s mistress to harm my brother but that accident was planned by her son, my step-brother and we couldn’t do anything about it.”

“What about that man who hit your brother and a person who ran the car over him?” Jiang Yang asked.

“The man who hit my brother said, he did it because of some personal issues with my brother so he got a small punishment for just hitting and the car driver said, it was not his fault as my brother suddenly came in front of his car so he too got just a small punishment. More than those two men me and my mother wanted the real culprits to get punished but we couldn’t do anything.”

Saying it, she started to cry and said, “My mother was helpless. I was a kid and my father too didn’t help us as he thought his mistress and his son couldn’t do it.”

Wiping her tears, Jiang Yang said, “This time you don’t have to worry as you are not alone.”

She looked at him to know what he meant. “I and there are other people to protect you now.”

“Other?” she asked

“Hmm! So don’t worry.” He assured her.

“But I think that man wanted to harm you just what happened with my brother.”

“They can’t as it’s not that easy. So relax and let me take you home,” saying it, Jiang Yang stood up and asked her to go with him.

Once they reached, Xi residence, Nixxie said, “Thank you so much” and opened the door of the car to step out of it.

Jiang Yang stepped out too so she asked, “Why you came out? I can go from here.”

“I thought you will ask me to come inside.” Saying it Jiang Yang stepped towards her.

She was caught off guard. She wanted to invite him but she knew at this hour, her step-brother must be home and she didn't want him to meet Jiang Yang as she was worried because of that evil man in her home.

Jiang Yang knew this but he had his own plans and wanted to go with her inside. “I promised your mother that I will send you home personally so I have to fulfill it. Let's go,” saying it he stepped forward to go inside the mansion without giving her a chance to stop him. Nixxie followed him in a hurry and all the while she was worried about what her step-brother will say.

Just as they entered the door of the mansion, Xi Cheng was there in the living room discussing something with his assistant. Seeing Jiang Yang there, he stood up from the sofa to go to Jiang Yang and said with a smile on his face, “Welcome, doctor Jiang Yang. I didn't expect you to come to our home.”

Memories from that day when Lu Qiang hit him were still fresh in Xi Cheng and Jiang Yang's mind but both behaved normally in front of Nixxie as if nothing happened.

Jiang Yang too smiled and said, “how can I not when I had a responsibility to send one pretty lady safely back to her home.”

“Hmm! Right. Have a seat.” Xi Cheng said.

“No! He is in a hurry to go to the hospital. He can come next time.” Nixxie said being scared in her heart. She didn't want Jiang Yang to be in a sight of Xi Cheng.

## 354 Don't Touch Me..

Jiang Yang looked at her and said, "It's okay. I still have enough time." Saying it he stepped towards the sofa and sat there while Xi Cheng sat opposite to him.

Nixxie stood there feeling anxious so Xi Cheng said, "Why are you standing there little sister. It's your home. Have a seat. We have a guest."

Nixxie was frowning from inside but sat beside Jiang Yang.

"I hope both of you enjoyed your dinner yesterday," Xi Cheng said.

"Yeah. It was really great. One bastard tried to ruin it but he couldn't succeed," Jiang Yang said being comfortable beside Nixxie and looking into her pretty eyes with a smile showing affection between them to her brother.

Nixxie felt like captured between these two men and smiled as much as she could as to agree with Jiang Yang's words as reciprocating his feelings for her.

Xi Cheng noticed the way Jiang Yang was looking at Nixxie with love in his eyes but didn't let his calm lose and said, "Ohh! Good to know it. I hope he didn't trouble you much."

Jiang Yang turned his head to look at Xi Cheng and said while looking into his eyes while carrying a pleasant smile on his face, "Not at all. They think doctors only knew how to use scalpels in the surgery room. They don't know what we are capable of."

"As in?" Xi Cheng asked.

"One fine cut at the right place and you won't realize how you died," Jiang Yang replied calmly.

Hearing Jiang Yang's confident words, Xi Cheng replied while carrying the same fake smile on his face, "Ohhh! That's really something. I think my sister found the right man."

“I don’t know but I think now it’s her time to be with the right people.” Jiang Yang replied and his replies were making Xi Cheng speechless.

“I think doctor Jiang Yang is good with words too. So many good qualities, a good doctor, a fighter and good with words and I am sure there are more.”

“Fighter? I wonder when did you see me fighting,” Jiang Yang asked while having a smile on his face.

Both were trying to mock each other with sugar-coated words and fake smiles on their faces while Nixxxie was feeling uncomfortable waiting to end it as soon as possible.

“I think you are underestimating me, doctor Jiang Yang. I need to look after my sister so I always know where and what she is doing?” Xi Cheng replied.

“Right. Every brother should look after their sisters. Then you must be aware that she was with me last night and seeing you are not upset with me, I think you have no problem with both us being together,”

Hearing it, Xi Cheng’s expressions changed. He looked at Nixxxie as somewhere he didn’t like the fact stated by Jiang Yang. He could see, she blushed with what Jiang Yang said ‘spending a night together’.

Jiang Yang was looking at him so sensing his sight on him, Xi Cheng went back to his fake smiling mode and said, “Well, I know it and I won’t ask anything more as I know she was with one trustable man.”

Jiang Yang didn’t fail to notice his changed expressions and replied, “When it comes to her, you can call me trustable but I can’t guarantee when it comes to others. Especially the jerks who will try to trouble her.”

Carrying the same smile on his face but his eyes betraying it, Xi Cheng said, “Good to hear it” and changed the topic, “Have breakfast with us.”

“No, I will get going. Next time, as there would be more chances of me coming here often.”



“Okay. I won’t stop a doctor from doing his work.”

As Jiang Yang stood up from the sofa, Nixxxie too stood up. Looking at her, Jiang Yang held her face in his both hands and kissing her on a forehead, he said, “Take care. I will see you soon.”

Nixxxie nodded and Jiang Yang left.

When Jiang Yang left, Nixxxie was about to leave to her room but just then, Xi Cheng spoke that made her stop in her tracks, “Your man is so confident. I wonder, from where this confidence come from? Is it Lu Qiang or something else.”

Hearing it, Nixxxie looked at him with rage in her eyes and asked, “Why did you do that?”

“What did I do, little sister?” Xi Cheng asked nonchalantly.

“Why did you try to harm him?” she asked firmly.

Xi Cheng was not a bit affected by her words and said, “Did I? I was just trying to check, the man with whom my sister is going out and is he able to protect her not. Is it wrong to care for my lovely sister?”

“Really?” she laughed to hear it and said angrily, “You tried to do the same thing that you did with my brother. I feel unfortunate to have one killer in my home and I share the same blood as him. I am ashamed that I have to call you as my brother in front of others.”

Hearing it, Xi Cheng’s expressions changed from relaxed to cold. Stepping towards her, he stood closer to her and said in a cold voice while staring into her eyes, “You should be grateful that we share the same blood and you are my sister or you can’t imagine what I would have done to you. Don’t make me lose my mind.”  
Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

His words, the way he was looking at her and that coldness around him passed a shiver through her spine and her feet trembled in fear. Xi Cheng held her as she was about to lose

her balance and asked with a normal tone, “Are you okay, little sister?”

She felt disgusted with his touch and pushed him back saying, “Don’t touch me.”

Taking a few steps away from him, Nixxxie ran to go upstairs to her room. Closing the door of her room, she stood while taking the support of the door and started to cry. She couldn’t understand why these days she started to feel uncomfortable and scared of her step-brother but she wanted to avoid him.

## 355 Li Lijun And His Words...

Nixxie didn't know why she felt like that. Even though she hated him, Xi Cheng was a brother to her as they had the same father but the way he was behaving these days was scaring her. she didn't know what and whom to say about this. She thought, she was taking him wrong as he is a brother but the next moment a thought troubled her, then, how can he behave like this? These thoughts were making her go all crazy.

She hated him for killing her brother and now she hated him even more that had no limit but the worst thing was that she couldn't do anything.

Once Nixxie left, running away from him, Xi Cheng had a devilish smile on his face and said, "Seems like I scared her again. I Can't stop it, sister, as I love to see you scared like a kitten."

Jiang Yang went back to the hospital but on the way, he was thinking about Nixxie and the devil inside her home. He decided to meet his friends in the evening and to discuss it as he was worried about Nixxie.

In the Lu mansion, on the breakfast table.

All the family members were present there with Jiang Yuyan sitting beside Lu Qiang. Elder Lu decided to talk about an important thing that he was thinking about since long back.

"Lu Qiang!" elder Lu called.

Looking at elder Lu, Lu Qiang asked, "Yes grandpa."

"Well, I know you have decided already about you and Jiang Yuyan but I still want to know when exactly my dear will become an official daughter-in-law of this family," Elder Lu asked and it made others look at Lu Qiang to as they too were curious to know it.

“It’s going to be winter now so it’s not possible right now. In the next few months, her 20th birthday is coming, so after that, we can plan it. Also, till then she would have done with the first year of studies and we can have a summer wedding.” Lu Qiang replied.

Jiang Yuyan was silent and didn’t react. From inside she was blushing. Her heart was beating a bit faster too as the wedding was a big thing for her but these men were discussing as if it was a small thing.

“Hmm! Then it would be in the next few months. Not that far,” Elder Lu said having a pleasant smile on his face looking at Jiang Yuyan. Feeling grandpa’s sight on her she blushed.

Others were happy too, except for the one person Su Hui but she didn’t utter a single word.

“Can’t wait to see Jiang Yuyan as my daughter in law.” Lu Jinhai said and others nodded too.

“She is already in our home so why all are so excited about. She is already a family.”

These words got everyone’s attention and those were from Li Lijun who was focused on his food. Lu Qiang smiled to hear it as he was agreed to what Lu Lijun said. Su Hui was the one more person who was happy to hear it as she didn’t find this wedding that important.

“Wedding is important Lu Lijun. One day you have to marry someone too and that time you will understand, why?” Ning Jiahui, Lu Lijun’s mother said to see her adorable younger son. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

Lu Lijun looked at his mother and said, “I don’t like these wedding things where all keep staring at you without any reason.”

All were smiling to hear his response so Lu Lian asked, “So are you not going to marry ever?”

“I will but not like this in front of everyone. Standing like the center of attraction and getting all the strange gazes from annoying outsiders.” Lu Lijun replied.

“Then how will you do it?” Lu Bao asked while others were waiting for his reply.

These two sisters never missed a chance to get replies from him as he was different and never thought in the same way as others.

“I will just bring her home and ask her to be my wife,” Lu Lijun replied not being aware of what his words meant.

“So you won’t do wedding so she can’t be your wife, Lu Lijun,” Lu Lian said.

“Doesn’t matter as long as I will love her,” Li Lijun replied coldly and started eating.

No one knows how and what to say to him. He was a kid and how one can make him understand the way this human world worked. Those words he was saying were too heavy to come from a boy of his age as to how come he will know about the relation of husband and wife and what this society expects from them to be.

“I don’t know how your wife is going to handle you? I have started to pity her from this moment whoever she would be” saying it, Lu Bao looked at Lu Lian and said, “A very strange brother we have.” Lu Lian nodded.

“Not as much as I will pity your husband, sister Lu Bao,” Lu Lijun said without even looking at his two sisters and focused on his food.

“Enough of teasing both of you. He is still so young to understand. Concentrate on food,” suddenly Su Hui spoke and these two girls shut their mouth.

Slowly that sweet boy who was loved and pampered by his two elder brothers was disappearing somewhere. Lu Qiang and Lu Feng could see how he was changing and going to the cold side. He used to be a sweet boy but during these few months, sometimes he looked more of a cold adult.

The whole family was getting used to his this kind of answers from Lu Lijun but Jiang Yang couldn't hold back how surprised she was and looked at Lu Qiang. Lu Qiang shook his head as assuring her as nothing.

Breakfast was over and Jiang Yuyan was with Lu Qiang outside waiting for his car as he was leaving for the office. "Lu Lijun!" Jiang Yuyan said.

"Huh!" Hearing it Lu Qiang looked at her.

## 356 Knowing Lu Lijun...

“Why Lu Lijun is so different. Just before breakfast when we were talking, he was a sweet kid who was smiling and on the dining table he was so cold and different,” Jiang Yuyan asked.

“This is how he is Yuyan. He is a gifted child and he is smarter than the kids of his age.” Lu Qiang replied.

“Yeah that can be the case but how come I feel like he is really different as in... I don't know how to explain it,” Jiang Yuyan said with so many things going on in her mind but she couldn't understand what was bothering her.

“You would be able to relate to him,” Lu Qiang said that made her ask him back, “Me?”

Lu Qiang nodded and replied, “Hmm! Because most of the time both of you are the same. The only difference is that you are an adult and he is still young so he doesn't know how to mold himself according to people around even though he tries to do so.”

“But I never behaved coldly like him,” Jiang Yuyan tried to defend herself.

Lu Qiang didn't say anything and looked at her with the questioning site.

She understood what he was talking about. She too had a cold side that she always tried to hide from others and now Lu Qiang had mentioned it, she felt speechless as she never wanted to accept it.

Just then the car arrived. Seeing her speechless, Lu Qiang didn't say anything that she won't like to hear and said, “I will leave now. It's time.”

“But....”

“There is nothing to be worried about him. He is a normal kid but his emotions and thinking keep changing according to the situation as I told you he is a very smart kid, not easy to fool. I

will tell you everything when we are free and not in any kind of hurry.” Saying it, Lu Qiang kissed her on the forehead and said, “See you in the evening.”

Sitting in the car he left while Jiang Yuyan was looking at his car till it disappeared from her sight.

“Elder brother left so no need to stand here.” Lu Lijun was standing behind her with one jar in his hand.

Jiang Yuyan turned to look at him and said, “Hmm! I was about to go inside.” Her sight fell on the jar in his hands and she asked, “What is this?”

“I am going to the pond to feed the fish and this is the food,” Lu Lijun replied.

“That’s nice.”

“Do you want to join?” Lu Lijun asked.

“Sure,” She replied.

Both went to the pond in the garden that was surrounding the gazebo in the center. Reaching to the pond, both stood there looking at the fish.

“They are all so pretty.”

“Hmm!” Nodding calmly he sat down and sat on the small rock that was carved in the small bench so that one can sit on it. Keeping the Jar in his hands to one side, he opened it and said, “You can give them food too.”

Smiling and feeling excited to feed fish in the pond, Jiang Yuyan sat beside him and picked up some food grains in her hand from the jar that was in between them. Lu Lijun too got some in his hands and he started to drop the food in his hand in the water. In no time, fish came and started their feast.

As the bench they were sitting was like almost touching the ground making them sit near the water so that they could see the fish clearly.

Jiang Yuyan followed what he did and poured the food in her hand in a pond, little by little.

“They seem hungry.” Jiang Yang said.



Lu Lijun nodded, “Hmm! They are.”

Seeing so many pretty fish in the pond, Jiang Yuyan asked excitedly, “Which one is your favorite among all these?”

“The one I like a lot never come out so easily. She is a bit stubborn,” Lu Lijun replied.

Jiang Yuyan laughed to hear it. “Haha! How can that be? Isn’t she hungry?”

“I don’t know but she is stubborn and I always have to wait for her to come out,” Lu Lijun replied.

“Does she come out then?” Jiang Yuyan asked.

Lu Lijun nodded having the same calm expressions since the start. “Hmm! But she takes too much time.”

Jiang Yuyan looked at him who was focused on his work with a serious expression on his face and asked, “She? How do you know that the fish is- she?” Jiang Yuyan found it amusing to see his dedication and patience for just one little fish.

“Because only girls can be this annoying,” Lu Lijun replied while still focused on feeding the fish not even looking at her.

Jiang Yuyan looked at the pond and asked casually, “If she is annoying why do you wait for her?”

“Because I like her and once I like someone, I never let them go.”

Those were mere simple words but Jiang Yuyan could feel the weight of those words. Looking at him, she said “Hmm! That was so intense.”

Lu Lijun didn’t react to it as if he didn’t hear her and continued his work but Jiang Yuyan wanted to know more about what exactly was there inside in his mysterious mind.

Seeing him still calm, Jiang Yuyan asked, “Tell me what do you like about her?”  
“Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

“She is pretty and mysterious and not like the other fish in the pond who are happy for no reason,” Lu Lijun replied

Jiang Yuyan was now curious to see the fish and asked while staring at the pond, “Is she here?”

“Not yet,” He replied.

“So will you weight for her?”

Lu Lijun nodded. “Hmm!”

All the fish present there finished eating and went away but the one Lu Lijun was weighting for was not there yet. He was sitting there silently looking at the pond weighting for her to come and he was still calm.

# 357 Because She Knows I Am Waiting For Her..

Jiang Yuyan sat beside him silently waiting for the fish to come. A half-hour passed by but the fish didn't come and still, both were sitting there silently not speaking a single word.

Lu Lijun was focused on the pond while Jiang Yuyan was curious to see the fish that was able to melt this little iceberg who was waiting for her without getting frustrated or angry. A half-hour passed by but he was still calm and there was not a bit of change in his expressions. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

“Do you think she will come?” Jiang Yuyan asked having doubt in her mind. She somewhere thought there was no fish and Lu Lijun was trying to pull her leg.

Lu Lijun nodded not taking his sight off from the pond, “Hmm!”

“Why are you so sure?” She asked to see how confident he was and that was making her feel like he was serious and not joking around.

“Because she knows I am waiting for her.” Lu Lijun replied.

Jiang Yuyan didn't know what to say. He was too confident that the fish will come and that surprised Jiang Yuyan. She thought it was an animal not a human to understand that he was waiting for her but she preferred to stay quiet and sat there without disturbing him.

One hour was about to pass by but still, there was no sign of the fish. Finally, Jiang Yuyan decided to say something but before she could say anything, Lu Lijun picked up food from the jar in his hands and started to pour in the pond, little by little.

Jiang Yuyna looked at the pond and there was one tiny colorful fish who was eating the food offered by Lu Lijun. That fish was really so pretty. The base of her body was white and shiny but it was covered with so many colorful dots and lines and prominently the red ones. Her fins have a border of orange and the top portion of her body was shaded in light blue color. She somewhere had yellow and green shades that made her look even prettier.

Even though the fish came after a wait of an hour, there was no excitement on Lu Lijun's face as if it was nothing new for him and he was used to it. Now she knew he was so confident because he knew she will definitely come. She didn't know what to think of this little adorable guy who sometimes seems more mature than the adults.

The way that fish was silently eating her food unlike the other fish who were more active while eating, made her look so adorable. Jiang Yuyan couldn't help but pick up some food from the jar and started to pour in a pond fish.

Seeing it, Lu Lijun stopped and let Jiang Yuyan feed the fish and asked, "Isn't she pretty?"

"Pretty and so adorable," Jiang Yuyan replied.

"Hmm!" Lu Lijun agreed.

Suddenly Jiang Yuyan asked, "Is your elder brother come here to feed them too?"

"Sometimes when he is free," Lu Lijun replied.

"So which is his favorite fish?" she asked excitedly.

"This is the one," Lu Lijun replied pointing towards the same fish for whom he was waiting for so long.

"Ohh so both of you are her admirer that's why she takes this much time as both of you might have spoiled her," Jiang Yuyan said with a wide smile on her face.

"We don't mind to spoil the person we like." Lu Lijun replied and said again, "Not just me and elder brother but brother Lu Feng like her too."

“Nothing surprising for me as you all Lu brothers are the same,” said Jiang Yuyan.

Li Lijun smiled to hear it and said, “Since the day brother Lu Qinag brought her here, she is always alone so we pay her more attention.”

“Hmm! That’s nice. She is lucky to get the attention of three handsome men from the family.”

Lu Lijun just smiled a little and he didn’t say anything.

Noticing the smile on his face, Jiang Yuyan asked while at him, “Are you blushing as I called you handsome?”

Lu Lijun turned his head to look back at her and said while staring in her eyes, “I am not a girl to keep blushing. I know I am handsome like my brother so there is nothing new to what you said.”

The way he stared at her, she could see how confident he was and it was not easy to talk to him or flatter him by praising him. “Ohh! You are really like your brother. So confident.”

Lu Lijun didn’t reply and continued staring at the fish that was playing in the water and said, “As you will be home because it’s our vacation and brother is not a home, you will be bored here.”

Jiang Yuyan nodded, “Hmm! Right. I am thinking about going to my home for a few days.”

“Brother Jiang Yang is busy too so you will be bored there too. Also, elder brother won’t let you go,” Lu Lijun said.

“So you know his better too. That is right but I will ask him to let me go. Moreover, I won’t be bored as I have interesting things to do there,” she replied

“What thing?” he asked curiously to look at her.

“I will paint,” she replied.

“You can do that here too,” Lu Lijun said.

“Here?” she asked with surprised expressions as her idea of painting was to do it in her art room in the Jiang Residence which was her favorite place.

Lu Lijun nodded, “Hmm! We both can paint.”

“Can we? I mean will you be fine if I will be there? You might feel I am a disturbance,” She asked.

“You are not a disturbance but you are a good company,” he said.

“Okay! As you say, we can paint together. Where should we do it?” Jiang Yuyan agreed.

“We can arrange things in Gazebo,” He replied.

“Fine with me.”

## 358 Elder Lu And His Bet...

Lu Lijun asked the servant to arrange drawing and painting stuff from in the gazebo. Soon everything was ready there and Jiang Yuyan and Lu Lijun were ready to work, their hands on. There were two stands in the gazebo kept opposite to each other along with all the stuff needed for drawing.

“Everything is ready. We can start now.” Lu Lijun said and stepped inside the gazebo.

“Hmm!” Nodding Jiang Yuyan followed him too.

Lu Lijun picked up an apron and passed it to Jiang Yuyan. Accepting it, she wore it. When she was about to tie it on her backside, she realized two tiny hands were already doing their work to tie the apron belts knot on her back.

Jiang Yuyan realized that was Lu Lijun and tried to turn her head to look at him.

“Stay still,” Lu Lijun said in an ordering tone.

Hearing it, Jiang Yuyan laughed lightly, so he asked, “What’s there to laugh about?”

“You are just like your brother in every way. If I didn’t know that you were here, I would have mistaken you as Lu Qiang,” she replied.

“But I am not him. Don’t expect me to be as nice as him,” saying it he finished tying a knot and turned to go towards the other stand.

She looked at this little iceberg who had serious expressions on his face and said, “Sometimes I feel like you are older than me when you behave coldly like this.”

“I am like this always. Get used to it as you will be here in this mansion after getting married to the elder brother,” He replied and picked up a pencil.

She nodded, “Hmm! I know. Where is your apron?” She asked.

“I don’t need it,” saying it started to draw.

Jiang Yuyan too started it and just then Elder Lu came there.

“What both of you are up to?”

Seeing elder Lu there, Jiang Yuyan greeted him with a smile while Lu Lijun replied focusing on his work, “Both of us are going to draw something.”

“Something? What is mean by that? You must have something clear in your mind what to draw when you are in front of the canvas.”

“But I don’t have anything in mind grandpa. I will just start something and let’s see what will it come out as,” Lu Lijun said staring at the white blank paper in front of him.

“Okay! I am eager to see what both of you are going to draw,” saying it, elder Lu sat in the chair that was arranged by a servant for him to sit comfortably. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

“Are you going to sit here grandpa?” Lu Lijun asked.

“Of course. I want to see your drawings,” Elder Lu replied.

“But it will take time and you will get bored.”

“I won’t as I am going to put one bet.”

“bet?” Lu Lijun and Lu Qiang both asked at the same time.

“Both of you just start and whose painting I would like more, I will fulfill one wish of the winner but you only have time till lunch.” Elder Lu made himself comfortable in the chair by leaning back into it.

“I don’t have any wish grandpa,” Lu Lijun said.

“Not me even,” Jiang Yuyan said.

“Everyone has something that they wished for desperately. If you think carefully, you will get the answer.” Elder Lu said.

Both didn’t say anything and continued their work. Suddenly, Elder Lu spoke again, “But the painting should be from your heart and I could see that you poured your heart into it. It



should be pretty to my eyes that I should not be able to take my eyes off from it. It should touch my heart.”

Both heard him and continued the work. Jiang Yuyan started to draw something with a smile on her face as if she was happy while drawing what was in her mind while Lu Lijung was looking at the blank white paper in front of him with a pencil in his hand.

He was thinking about the last words said by his grandpa that ‘the painting should be pretty and it should touch his heart’. Suddenly something clicked in his mind and he started to draw slowly and with full concentration having serious expressions on his face.

Jiang Yuyan was smiling lightly while drawing and Lu Lijun had no expressions at all. He looked like an artist who was immersed in his work forgetting the world around him.

In a while, both done with making an outline for the painting so elder Lu said, “Soon it’s going to be a time for lunch and both of you should complete it before that. You have only one hour left”

Both nodded and started to work. Elder Lu was looking at both of them and smiled how busy and focused they were. One hour was about to pass by and elder Lu said, “Now you guys have ten minutes only.”

Both started to work faster and stopped at the end of those ten minutes. Seeing time was up, elder Lu looked at them to stop but they were done before that.

“Nice to see it was done before time. Now let me see what you guys did.” Saying it elder Lu stood up from the chair and went to both of them. As Jiang Yuyan was closer and standing before Lu Lijun, elder Lu stopped at her and asked, “May I?”

“Hmm!” Nodding Jiang Yuyan stepped back from her place to make space for elder Lu. Looking at the drawing elder Lu smiled and said, “As expected from you. They say you draw what is always on your mind and that you feel from your heart. I can see that my grandson is always in your mind and heart.

Jiang Yuyan smiled and blushed to hear it. She drew the portrait of Lu Qiang. She drew his face as if he was looking at her with love in his eyes having that pleasant and adorable smile on his face. One can see the real Lu Qiang through Jiang Yuyan's eyes by seeing her work on that blank sheet of paper.

## 359 I Will Get Everything Best...

As expected Lu Qiang was looking like the most handsome person in the world and the one who is full of love and care for others.

“You are able to draw my grandson the way he actually is and others fail to see it in him that how loving and caring he is. I am so happy that you drew him and it touched my heart.” Elder Lu was happy.

“Thank you, grandpa,” Jiang Yuyan replied. As grandpa said, one draw what is in their mind and heart and Lu Qiang was the only one she always thought about. Even if she would have drawn hundreds of times later, it would be only Lu Qiang on that blank white paper.

Patting her head, elder Lu Moved towards Lu Lijun and said, “Let me see what this little Lu did.”

Lu Lijun stepped back and made a space for elder Lu. the moment elder Lu saw it, he couldn't say a single word and continued staring at it.

“How is it, grandpa?” Lu Lijun asked.

Stil elder Lu was staring at it so Jiang Yuyan was curious to see what exactly Lu Lijun drew to make elder Lu speechless and stunned. She couldn't hold back and stepped towards both of them. The moment Jiang Yuyan saw it, she didn't know how to react. She never ever expected him to draw it.

“Really pretty,” Elder Lu exclaimed.

“I tried to do what you said, grandpa. Something that is really pretty and you should not be able to take your sight away from it.” Lu Lijun said being confident about he was successful in doing what his grandpa asked for.

“Indeed!” Grandpa said while still staring at the drawing. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

Jiang Yuyan was stunned to see it and couldn't help but stare at him with surprised expressions on her face.

Sensing her gaze on him, Lu Lijun looked at her and asked, “Did you like it Yuyan?”

She couldn't say a word as to how she can praise a drawing that's actually her. Praising the drawing was like praising her own beauty but she couldn't deny the fact that he was amazing with what he just drew. Such kind of art can only be drawn by the expert person and Lu Lijun was still too young.

“How can she answer you when she is stunned to see how well you drew this portrait of her. It's exactly the way she is, these bright eyes, amusing smile, and these beautifully carved features.” Elder Lu said, looking at her.

When Lu Lijun decided to draw and thought what he should, he remembered the grandpa's words of condition to win the bet. Though he didn't want to win the bet, he wanted to do it to make his grandpa happy.

While thinking, he looked at grandpa and then his sight fell on Jiang Yuyan. Till now he understood, Jiang Yuyan was so precious to grandpa and whenever he saw her, it didn't fail to bring a smile on his grandpa's face so he decided to draw it. Moreover, the condition of grandpa was the drawing should be pretty so he thought, there was nothing prettier than Yuyan around them.

After deciding to draw her, he drew it according to his imagination. He didn't look at her for reference. He just drew what image of her he had in his mind. He especially focussed on her bright eyes and her pretty smile. Her hair parted in the middle, tied in a neat bun on the backside of her head, a few strands left loose on either side of her face but he made them looked wavy instead of a straight one.

Jiang Yuyan was looking so pretty but somewhat different from her current appearance. “I think this is future Yuyan. She

is pretty as well as she is looking like one mature woman. See the face.” Elder Lu said.

“I think so too grandpa,” Jiang Yuyan said.

“Who knows, in the future you will look like it, even prettier than no one could take their eyes off of you,” Lu Lijun said.

“You are so funny Li Lijun.” Jiang Yuyan didn’t think she was that much pretty but the people around her never stopped praising her like she was the only pretty woman in the whole world. She was fine with Lu Qiang calling her pretty because it was obvious as he loved her but when others did the same, she always felt awkward.

“No, I am serious. I imagined you like this,” Lu Lijun replied.

“You see me as an aged woman but I am still too young,” said Jiang Yuyan.

“I know but this is you in the future and I bet elder brother won’t let you go out as to protect you from the sights of other people,” Lu Lijun teased her and before she could ask him to stop, elder Lu spoke.

“Lu Lijun, let her be pretty but pray that no one lay their eyes on her or your elder brother will take those eyes out.”

Lu Lijun agreed and said, “Isn’t it obvious as elder brother loves her. I would have done the same if I was elder brother.”

“You are still too young to think about these things Li Lijun.” Jiang Yuyan interrupted him.

“I know, Yuyan. Anyways, I am not interested in these things,” Lu Lijun said having annoyed expressions on his face as he found the woman and these love stuff annoying.

“I hope you will get the best woman in the future and we all will be happy for you,” Jiang Yuyan said looking at the adorable little guy.

“Hmm! I will get everything best.”

When both were talking, elder Lu was thinking about whom to choose as a winner and said, “So now I have to decide a winner, right?”

Both looked grandpa and he spoke, “Well for me both of you are winners as both drew the people I love the most and dear to me. So I should grant both of your wishes.”

# 360 Saving A Wish For Future...

“I don’t wish for anything, grandpa as I already have whatever I could wish for and the most important thing is, I have Lu Qiang so I don’t want anything else,” Jiang Yuyan said.

“Hmm! That makes sense, then what should we do?” asking it, elder Lu looked at both of them.

“You can grant Lu Lijun’s wish,” Jiang Yuyan replied.

“No need grandpa as I did it to make you happy and not for any wish,” Lu Lijun denied.

“I know but still one of you has to take it as those were my words and I never get back on my own words, ever. So tell me what you wish for Lu Lijun,” Elder Lu asked.

“Grandpa but...” Lu Lijun tried to say something

Jiang Yuyan sensed that he was going to say no again so she interrupted him and said, “It’s like grandpa’s blessing, Lu Lijun, so accept it. You are lucky that you have such lovely grandpa.”

The last thing Lu Lijun could do was saying ‘no’ to Jiang Yuyan. He didn’t know why and when it became like it but just like his brother, he couldn’t say no to her and said, “Okay, grandpa.”

Elder Lu was happy to hear it and said, “So tell me what you want?”

“Umm! I can’t think of anything right now but can I save this wish for the future when I will actually wish for something and only you could give me that?” Lu Lijun asked.

Elder Lu nodded. “Hmm! That can be acceptable. I will save this one wish for the future and you can ask me whatever you want. I will grant it. It’s my promise but do it before I die,”

Saying it elder Lu smiled while Jiang Yuyan and Li Lijun looked unhappy to hear the last line.

“Who is going to die here? I can’t see anyone who is about to die.”

Suddenly this voice disturbed them and they looked at the source.

“Brother Lu Qiang,” Lu Lijun exclaimed with a bright smile on his face. Jiang Yuyan looked at Lu Lijun and noticed how he changed. A moment before he was looking like a mature person and now he was like a spoiled younger brother who loved his elder brother a lot.

She ignored and looked at Lu Qiang as she was happy to see him. When Lu Qiang reached inside the gazebo, Jiang Yuyan asked, “How come you are here at this hour?”

“Today, I thought to have lunch at home with all family members,” Lu Qiang replied

Elder Lu laughed to hear it and said, “Haha! He was missing you that’s why he is here. There is no such thing as having lunch at home and with family.” Elder Lu teased him.

“That is a true, grandpa. Elder brother never came home for lunch once he is in office.” Lu Lijun was with his grandpa too.

Jiang Yuyan blushed and didn’t say anything. She was happy to see happy so she had nothing to say.

Lu Qiang stood beside Jiang Yuyan and said while circling his hand around her shoulder and asked, “Is it wrong to miss my woman?”

Li Lijun shook his head and elder Lu replied, “It’s not wrong. We were just correcting your reason to come home, at this hour.”

All smiled to hear it and Lu Qiang asked, “What were you guys doing here?”

“Ohh! There is something interesting for you. Come see.” Saying it elder Lu signaled Lu Qiang to look at both wooden stands having a drawing.



Lu Qiang stepped towards the nearest one and that was Jiang Yuyan's drawing. Looking at the drawing he smiled and looked at her. Both didn't say anything and then he stepped at Lu Lijun's stand.

Seeing his work, Lu Qiang was surprised too and asked looking at Lu Lijun, "You made it?"

Lu Lijun nodded. "It's really pretty. I never saw her like this but I can see she will look pretty as usual." Lu Qiang couldn't stop praising.

"This how she will look in the future," Lu Lijun replied.

"That's really nice." saying it Lu Qiang looked at Jiang Yuyan and said, "Looking forward to seeing you like this, a matured woman."

Jiang Yuyan smiled and others nodded as agreeing to Lu Qiang's words. All looked happy while having smiles on their faces, being unaware that what they are wishing for would be on the cost of something really precious. They were going to lose someone dear that will make her a mature woman like in a painting.

"Let's go for lunch," Grandpa Lu said it and all went inside the mansion. Suddenly a windblown and the portrait Lu Lijun drew, was about to be blown away by the strong force of the wind. Lu Lijun didn't secure it properly and it was already loose.

Lu Lijun heard the flapping sound of a sheet and turned to look at it. The moment he saw that the sheet of a portrayed was about to be blown away, he ran back but before he could hold it, the sheet blown away from there and fell into the plants in the pond. Because of those plants, the portrait was saved from falling into the water.

Others too turned to see why he ran back to the gazebo suddenly and saw him trying to catch the portrait.

Giving out a sigh of relief, Lu Lijun looked at the portrait that was caught into the plants in the pond. He felt glad that it didn't fall into the water. Without thinking twice, Lu Lijun crossed the railing of gazebo being ready to jump in the water

of the pond. The plants which saved the portrait were in the water and one had to step into the water to get it.

Seeing him ready to get into the water, Jiang Yuyan exclaimed, “Li Lijun, No. Don’t get into the water. It’s already cold.” Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

Looking at her, Lu Lijun spoke calmly, “Don’t worry. It will just take a minute.”

# 361 The Most Important Dream..

“But...” before Jiang Yuyan could say anything further, Lu Qiang placed a hand on her shoulder to stop her and said, “Let him be. He will be fine.”

Lu Lijun jumped into the water. It was not too deep, just above his waist but Jiang Yuyan was worried about him to catch a cold. Although, it was not snowfall yet, but the weather was getting colder. For her, he was still a kid who needs to be taken care of.

Lu Lijun walked towards the plants in the pond and pulled out a portrait slowly and safely. Carrying the portrait in his hand, he walked towards the boundary of the lake.

“Let’s help him get out,” saying it Jiang Yuyan was about to step towards the lake but Lu Qiang stopped her. “No need.”

“Huh?” she looked at him.

Suddenly Elder Lu spoke, “Lu Qiang is right. No need to help him.” Elder Lu was looking at Lu Lijun who was getting out of the pond carrying a portrait safely having a calm expression on his face.

Jiang Yuyan couldn’t understand why these two older men didn’t want to help one younger boy. Before she could ask anything, Lu Qiang said, “One should know how to protect the things belongs to them and it’s his time to learn it.”

Elder Lu nodded and said, “Hmm! You are right, Lu Qiang and I can see he would do anything to protect his things. Look at him. There is not even a tinge of annoyance on his face and he did it from his heart.”

“Hmm! He is going to be the strongest man in this family,” Lu Qiang said.

Both were observing Lu Lijun and his actions very carefully.

“I said it, long back. He would be the one to lead us and nowadays I can see the changes in him, I just hope all these changes in him would be for good.” Elder Lu was happy but worried somewhere. “Sometimes being too strong mentally is not a good thing. One should know how is it to be weak and helpless.”

“He will learn his lessons on his own grandpa. I have no doubt about him. He is going to be a great person. He is the most important dream of mine that I want to fulfill in every way possible.” Lu Qiang said while looking at his brother who was coming towards them being drenched in water till half of his chest.

“Elder Lu nodded. “Hmm! I know. Don’t worry you have put so much effort into him so it won’t be wasted. Moreover, I can see your all efforts are paying off.”

When these men were talking about Lu Lijun, Jiang Yuyan was looking at both of them to understand what they were talking about and stayed silent. Just then Lu Lijun came to them.

“This is for you.” Saying it, Lu Lijun gave Jiang Yuyan the portrait in his hand.

“Thank you.” Accepting it, Jiang Yuyan said, “Go and change your clothes or you will catch a cold.”

“Nothing will happen to me. Don’t worry.” Getting this reply she frowned. “You and your brother cant stop acting strong. Never listen to anyone.”

Seeing her frowning all three smiled and Lu Qiang signaled Lu Lijun to do what she said.

Lu Lijun understood his brother’s signal and said while looking at Jiang Yuyan, “Okay, I am going. Don’t be mad.” Saying it, Li Lijun went fast in the mansion.

Jiang Yuyan looked at the portrait in her hand and Lu Qiang said, “I think no one can draw you better than him.”  
Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

She smiled to hear it and said, “He is really a talented little boy. I never expected him to be so fine artist.”

“Not just this but he is talented in so many things and that can shock you even more. His brain is extraordinary,” Lu Qiang said having pride about his younger brother.

“I will look forward to knowing him more.” Jiang Yuyan said and all went inside the mansion.

In the evening, Jiang Yang went to Lu Qiang’s office where he was waiting for him already.

Jiang Yang entered his office and sat on the sofa, leaning back into it to rest.

“You looked tired. Were you busy with surgeries?” Lu Qiang asked and got up from his chair.

“Surgeries and my work can’t make me feel tired. You know that” Jiang Yang said and closed his eyes.

“Then what happened.” Lu Qiang sat on the sofa.

“I think Nixxie is scared of her stepbrother.” Jiang Yang replied while still, his eyes closed.

“Isn’t it obvious as he already killed her brother and she knows he can do anything to her and her mother.”

“I know that is the fact but what I mean to say, she is scared in the other way,” Jiang Yang didn’t know how to explain it.

“What do you mean?” Lu Qiang asked worriedly as he couldn’t think of anything.

“You know when a woman is scared of a man and try to maintain a distance with him and...”

“You mean to say.... But he is her brother. Even though he is a stepbrother, they share the same blood. You might have mistaken.” Lu Qiang said, understanding what Jiang Yang was trying to say.

“That’s why I was confused and thought how to say it but somewhere I am sure about it that Nixxie is scared of him,” Jiang Yang said while pressing his temples.

“I know he is a bastard but I never heard him acting like this ever to any woman so I can’t be sure about it.” Lu Qiang said.

“I don’t know much about him but what I noticed in her eyes was something that led me to think about it.”

“If you noticed it then it might be right but still I think there is nothing to be worried about. He won’t harm her.”

“Isn’t it dangerous to keep her with him. Once I ignored the things and Yuyan had to suffer and now if it happens again, I won’t be able to forgive myself ever.”

## 362 Lu Lijun- A Tease...

Lu Qiang could see why Jiang Yang was worried about Nixxxie as he had already suffered seeing his sister. "Don't worry I will look into it," Lu Qiang assured him.

"Isn't there any way to get her out from there?" Jiang Yang asked. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

"We can but not right now and I can just say that soon he would be out of their lives," Lu Qiang replied

"Soon? How much soon? Till then I don't want it to be so late."

Putting a hand on Jiang Yang's shoulder to calm him down, Lu Qiang spoke, "I will ask my men to keep an eye on her. Don't worry. What you are worried about won't happen."

Finally, Jiang Yang opened his eyes to look at him and said, "I am so worried about her. I don't know how she lived with such a man around her all the time."

"I can understand but somewhere I am sure she will be fine. Soon I am going to visit him so rest assured."

"Visit him?" Jiang Yang was surprised to hear it.

"Just to settle a few things. Nothing much," Lu Qiang replied.

"Hmm!"

"Do you want to have dinner with me? We can go out or I can just order it here." Lu Qiang didn't want to leave Jiang Yang alone in this condition.

Jiang Yang was feeling too tired and said, "Hmm! Here would be better. I don't want to go out. Call our stubborn friend too."

Lu Qiang called Lu Feng and asked him to come for dinner with them. Lu Feng agreed and at the time of dinner, Lu Feng

arrived there. Lu Qiang informed Jiang Yuyan that he won't be coming home for dinner and he would be late.

Jiang Yuyan was fine with it but she was already missing and couldn't help but feel sad. She went to the dining room and sat in her chair looking at the empty chair of Lu Qiang.

Elder Lu noticed it and asked, "Is he going to be late today?"

"Hmm!" Jiang Yuyan nodded.

"Isn't it obvious to understand from her sad face?" Lu Lijun said while looking at Jiang Yuyan, sitting in his chair.

"Haha! You are right," Elder Lu replied and others laughed at it.

Jiang Yuyan was already upset and hearing it, Jiang Yuyan gave him a look as if she was saying 'You little boy. Stop teasing me or I might beat you.'

Lu Lijun stared back at her and said with a smirk on his lips, "Even if you give me this look, I won't stop so stop sulking from inside as if you want to beat me."

"Cough-Cough! W-When did I say it." Jiang Yuyan asked. She was stunned to see how he was able to guess her inner thoughts.

Lu Lijun got up from his chair to pass her water as she was coughing. His hands were short to reach across the table so he got up and sat in Lu Qiang's chair.

Offering her water, he said, "You don't need to say it as your eyes are enough to convey your threatening message."

Others were smiling to see it and didn't disturb both of them as they were happy to see Lu Lijun getting well along with Jiang Yuyan. Lu Lijun never teased anyone before but he was enjoying doing it with Jiang Yuyan.

Hearing him, Jiang Yuyan moved her sight away from him to her dish and didn't say anything as others were sitting but it looked like she was thinking something.

"Don't worry. Though elder brother is not here, I will look after you as I have promised him to take care of you in his



absence,” Lu Lijun said it and sat in Lu Qiang’s chair shifting his dish from his previous place to the current one.

“I am fine, Lu Lijun. Don’t worry about me.” Saying it, Jiang Yuyan started to eat.

“Hmm! I believe you.” Saying it he added some food in her dish and said, “As you are fine, then finish it all.”

“This much? What do you think, am I a cow or what?” Jiang Yuyan exclaimed.

Lu Lijun nodded and said with a slight smile on his face, “Hmm! A cute cow. Now finish it.”

All laughed to hear what Lu Lijun said and they were looking at him to see how he was smiling and teasing her. It was the new side of him they were witnessing. All were silently looking at this bickering pair while eating.

Jiang Yuyan remembered the word ‘cute cow’ when Lu Qiang called her like this and said, “You are behaving like your brother.”

“Haven’t you said it before that I am like elder brother?” Lu Lijun didn’t fail to reply her properly.

“I said it once but stop behaving like him.”

“I am not behaving like him. This is what I am.” Lu Lijun replied while straight staring in her eye.

Suddenly Elder Lu laughed and said, “He is one Lu after all. How he can not be like us and his own brother? I am so proud of my little grandson that he is going to be a real Lu from his bones to the flesh.”

Lu Jinhai nodded and said, “You are right, father.”

“Lu Lijun, let her eat quietly.” suddenly Ning Jiahui interrupted Lu Lijun before he could tease Jiang Yuyan more.

Hearing it, Jiang Yuyan gave out a sigh of relief.

“Hmm! Lu Lijun nodded and both started to eat quietly. Still, Lu Lijun continued to add food in her dish and she couldn’t say no. She lost her appetite after knowing Lu Qiang would come home late but because of Lu Lijun, she had to eat.

Once dinner was done, Jiang Yuyan went out in the garden to freshen up her mood and thought to wait for Lu Qiang sitting in the garden instead of being locked in a room.

When she was sitting alone on the bench under the tree in the garden, in a while someone came there and stood behind her. Before she could turn to see who that was, she was covered in a shawl.

# 363 Pregnant With Just A kiss...

In Lu Qiang's office, Lu Feng joined them for dinner. While eating, they talked about Nixxie and Xi Cheng. Hearing everything from Jiang Yang, Lu Feng replied, "Don't worry Jiang Yang. that bastard won't harm her. I know him somewhat. He is just trying to scare her to disturb her psychologically."

"Are you sure?" Jiang Yang asked.

"Hmm! If he wanted to do something, he would have done it till now and that would have been the easiest way for him to scare her mother. Even if aunt Song Meilin wanted to protect her father's hard-earned business, it wouldn't be of much importance than her daughter," Lu Feng said.

"Right!" Lu Qiang agreed with Lu Feng.

"So don't worry. She is safe and he is just trying to play with her psychologically. Moreover, He is good at playing with the brain of anyone. Nixxie just has to be strong and that would be enough," Lu Feng said again to assure him.

"I need to talk to her or he would be successful in his plan as I could see at that moment what kind of expressions she had when she saw him," Jiang Yang said being worried about her.

"Hmm! Do it. If he is doing what you are saying then she definitely needs someone to help her to stay strong psychologically and understand his plans," Lu Qiang said.

"I will meet her tomorrow," Jiang Yang replied.

These three friends finished their talk and left to go back home as it was going to be late.

"Why don't you come to Lu Mansion for tonight?" Lu Qiang asked when they reached to their cars outside of the office building.

“No! It’s fine. I will just go back home,” Jiang Yang said as he looked tired. He turned to go to his car and Lu Qiang looked at Lu Feng.

Both wanted to take Jiang Yang with them as not wanting him to be alone. Lu Qiang signaled Lu Feng asking what to do so Lu Feng replied in a mute, ‘wait’.

Looking at Jiang Yang who was about to open the door of his car to sit inside, Lu Feng said, “Why would you come with us now as you found a woman. You forgot your darling, huh? Here I was thinking, I can spend a night with you but you broke my heart, Jiang Yang.”

Lu Qiang smiled to hear it and Jiang turned to look at Lu Feng and asked, “What did you just say?”

“Exactly what you just heard,” Lu Feng replied.

Giving out a deep sigh Jiang Yang stepped towards him and said, “Ohh I hurt my darling so I should make up for it. Saying it, Jiang Yang did something unexpected that shook Lu Feng and Lu Qiang.

Jiang Yang new why Lu Qiang and Lu Feng were like this and they were worried about him so he didn’t let go of a chance to get back at them. He decided to turn Lu Feng’s words back at him but in his own shameless way.

Jiang Yang stepped towards Lu Feng and after saying his lines, without giving a chance to Feng to understand what was going to happen, Jiang Yang kissed him on his cheek and asked teasingly, “Are you happy. my darling?”

“What the heck. I am feeling like puke.” Lu Feng exclaimed and reacted as if he was going to vomit.

Jiang Yang was calm and said, “It’s just a kiss on the cheek and you are already pregnant.”

“What the hell. What are you talking about? Ass hole.” Lu Feng was furious to hear what he said.

“As you are feeling like to vomit, I thought I made you pregnant just with a kiss on the cheek,” Jiang Yang replied.

Lu Feng looked at Lu Qianh who was smiling showing his cute canines and said, “Lu Qiang, You take him with you. I am going.”

“But I want to go with my darling or I will just stay here.”  
Jiang Yang said like he was a spoiled girl.

Lu Qiang looked at annoyed Lu Feng and said, “I can’t help you with this. Take care of your darling and I am leaving as my darling must be waiting for me.” saying it, Lu Qiang sat in his car and left.

Lu Feng couldn’t help but frown to see Lu Qiang leaving.  
“Are you scared of me, darling.” Jiang Yang didn’t stop teasing Lu Feng. He was enjoying it and said again, “You started it but I will always be the one to end it.”

Lu Feng heard it but controlled himself and said, “Let’s go. Leave your car here. I will drive you.” Lu Feng didn’t want Jiang Yang to drive in this condition when his brain was a mess. Though he was annoyed with his shameless behavior, his worry about him was more than his annoyance.

Nodding Jiang yang sat in Lu Feng’s car and said, “Nothing is better than when your darling takes care of you and drive you home.”

Lu Feng ignored him and drove the car away from Lu corporation to go to Lu Mansion.

In the Lu mansion, when after dinner Jiang Yuyan went to the garden, Lu Lijun too followed her seeing her still upset but before that, he asked the servant to bring one shawl.

She was sitting on the bench that was under the tree and looked sad. Getting a shawl from the servant, Lu Lijun went to her and before she could see him, he covered her with a shawl.

Jiang Yuyan saw him and she was surprised with what he just did.

“You will catch a cold. It’s winter now, so while missing elder brother don’t forget to take care of yourself.” Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

Saying it, Lu Lijun sat beside her and said, “Don’t be this sad. Elder brother would be here soon.”

Giving out a deep sigh, Jiang Yuyan said, “I know. I am fine. I just wanted to get some fresh air.”

“Hmm! I believe you.” Saying it Lu Lijun sat quietly.

# 364 Won't Ever Call You As My Sister-In-Law...

Jiang Yuyan looked at him and asked, “Why do I feel like whenever you say- ‘I believe you’. You actually don’t believe me.”

“Is that so?” He reacted normally with his usual line.

She looked at this little guy who looked so calm and made her confused again to think he was different again. “Hmm!” she nodded.

Lu Lijun smiled. Seeing him smiling she frowned, “Why do you say that you believe me when actually don’t?”

Lu Lijun stared into her eyes and asked, “Then what should I say- I caught your lie?”

She couldn’t say a word and thought, “This little iceberg and that older iceberg, both are the same.”

“Hmm! I know.” suddenly Lu Lijun spoke.

“What?” she asked.

“I and elder brother both are the same,” he replied.

Hearing it, she was shocked again and thought while observing his face, ‘was I so loud or he could guess it right just like that.’

Lu Lijun too was observing her reaction and said, “Don’t think too much. Your expressions are enough to say what you are thinking about. I don’t have to hear what you are thinking.”

Hearing it Jiang Yuyan again thought, ‘Fuck!’

“Cursing is not a good thing.”

She stood up from the bench in a shock and asked, “W-What did you hear. I mean what you heard?”

“I didn’t hear anything but your expressions are saying that you are cursing,” He replied calmly.

Giving out a deep sigh Jiang Yuyan said, “Stop observing my face.”

“Hmm! Okay, as you wish.” More she was panicking more he was relaxed.

Just then Lu Qiang’s car arrived outside of the Lu Mansions gate and Lu Lijun said, “Elder brother is here. Now you can smile.” Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

Jiang Yuyan heard him and looked at the car that was entering inside the gate of Lu Mansion. She smiled to see it and stepped to go towards where the car was going to stop, in front of the door of the mansion.

Lu Qiang got out of the car and saw Jiang Yuyan was coming towards him. Smiling he stepped towards her and as he reached her, he hugged her.

“You missed me?” Lu Qiang asked.

“Hmm! She nodded and hugged him tightly.

Patting her back, Lu Qiang said, “I have a surprise for you.”

“She moved her face back to look at him and asked, “What?”

Turning his face to look at the gate of the mansion, he signaled her to look in that direction and just then Lu Feng’s car arrived.

“That’s Lu Feng,” She said.

“Wait for a while.”

The car stopped at the entrance of the mansion and Jiang Yang stepped out of it with Lu Feng. The moment she saw Jiang Yang, she exclaimed, “Brother Yang.”

Lu Feng and Jiang Yang noticed and came towards her. The bright smile on her face was showing how happy she was to see her brother.



“How are you, little birdie?” Jiang Yang asked.

“Don’t call me that,” she said and pout.

“Haha! Little birdie, suits her,” Lu Lijun too came to them and he was laughing to hear what Jiang Yang called her.

“You are the one who is little here, so we should call you like that.” Jiang Yuyan said as she was upset to see him laughing at her.

“This is not related to the age but the development of the brain and according to that you are the youngest one.” Lu Lijun replied and that made others smile but they controlled as not wanting to upset her.

“You.....” Jiang Yuyan was about to say something but Li Lijun spoke again that interrupted her.

“Thank god, brother you came early or soon we all would have been swimming in a pool of her tears.”

“When did I cry,” she asked to look at Lu Lijun who was not a mood stop from pulling her leg.

“You didn’t but you looked like you were about to cry,” Lu Lijun replied.

“I was not.” Jiang Yuyan was not ready to admit.

Lu Qiang caressed her cheek with his finger as she was still standing closer to him and asked, “Were you missing me that badly?”

“I was but that crying thing he made up,” she replied.

“Hmm! But I think more than seeing me, you are happy to see your brother,” Lu Qiang said that made her speechless.

“Umm...That...”

“Why can’t she? After all, we don’t see each other daily.” Saying it Jiang Yang stepped towards his sister and she hugged him, “I missed you brother.”

“I missed you too,” saying it, Jiang Yang hugged her back. Seeing her he had a pleasant smile on his face as if he forgot his worries those he had in mind before coming Lu mansion.

Jiang Yuyan was the one that could make him forget all his worries just by her presence, just like a mother forgets everything after seeing her adorable kid.

“Seems like you are enjoying here as other than me there is someone who can annoy to death,” Jiang Yang said.

“Don’t remind me. The whole day he is just teasing me and I can’t even scold him,” Jiang Yuyan said while looking at Lu Lijun.

“Such a child. Complaining about me to your brother,” Lu Lijun said to tease her again with a slight smile on his lips.

“See! This is what I am talking about, brother.”

“Hmm! But remember the one who annoys you the most, is the one to care for you the most.” Saying it, Jiang Yang looked at Lu Lijun and asked, “Am I right, Lu Lijun?”

“Right! It’s our responsibility to look after kids,” Lu Lijun said and everyone laughed. Jiang Yuyan frowned and said, “Who are you calling a kid, huh? I am eight years older to you.”

“I told it’s not about the age,” Lu Lijun replied.

“My brain works fine too. I think I should start acting like your sister-in-law to stop you from teasing me.”

“I told you, I won’t ever call you as my sister-in-law as you are my friend first.”

## 365 Let's Warm You Up...

"I told you, I won't ever call you as my sister-in-law as you are my friend first." Lu Lijun was firm on his decision to call her Yuyan always and no one said anything as it was not a big deal.

Jiang Yuyan didn't object and said, "As you wish, Lu Lijun. Whatever you call me, I will be always your friend."

With a teasing smile on his face, Lu Lijun said, "Really? How about I call you Little Birdie just like brother Yang?"

Frowning Jiang Yuyan looked at her brother and said, "It's all because of you."

Jiang Yang acted as if he did nothing wrong and said, "What did I do? Little birdie suits you. It's so cute."

"Yeah! Right." Lu Lijun agreed to look at Jiang Yang.

Jiang Yuyan exclaimed, "Lu Lijun If you call me little birdie, I won't talk to you."

This time Lu Lijun decided to give up and said, "Okay, I won't. Anyways I like to call you as Yuyan. It's better."

Jiang Yuyan smiled. Seeing everything was sorted out, Lu Qiang asked, "If you guys are done, can we go inside?" everyone nodded.

Lu Lijun was ahead of everyone, Lu Qiang and Lu Feng were walking together followed by Jiang Yang and Jiang Yuyan.

Lu Feng was observing Lu Lijun and said to Lu Qiang, "Don't you think he has changed?"

"Hmm! I and grandpa noticed it too," Lu Qiang replied.

"He is talkative now and he is enjoying teasing Yuyan." Lu Feng said.

"He is and I am happy that he has started to open up to someone else other than just both of us," Lu Qiang said while looking at Lu Lijun who was walking ahead of them.

“Yuyan’s presence around him is a good thing,” Lu Feng said.

Lu Qiang nodded, “Hmm! He likes her and cares for her.”

“I can see that but knowing Yuyan she is not the one to be calm. You know what I mean?” Lu Feng asked.

“Hmm! She is considerate towards him and allows him to say what he wants. If there is someone who will act like this with her, I won’t be surprised to see him lying on the floor the next moment.” Lu Qiang said and Lu Feng nodded while smiling. All went to their rooms after Jiang Yuyan talked to her brother for a while.

In Lu Feng’s room, after freshening up and getting ready to sleep, Lu Feng looked at, Jiang Yang who was silent and different from his cool self. Though he was alone with him, he was not teasing Lu Feng and looked tense.

“Are you still thinking about it?”

“Hmm!”

“I think you should trust Lu Qiang. His thought process starts from where we stop thinking.” Lu Feng said.

“Hmm! I know.”

Then stop worrying and go to sleep.

In Lu Lijun’s room, as he entered the room, the servant came. “Young master.”

Lu Lijun turned to look at the door. The servant was standing there with a car in his hand, it was the same car Li Lijun was experimenting with and a few days back went to show it to Lu Feng. As Lu Hui came suddenly, he forgot to take that car with him.

“Ohh! I forgot about it.” Saying it, Lu Lijun went to the servant to get it back.

The servant found the next day while cleaning the corridor in front of Lu Feng’s room but he forgot to return it back to Lu Lijun.

Lu Lijun got his car and went to his study table. He wanted to watch what the camera in his car captured but decided to do it

later as it was late and went to sleep being unknown that there must be something that can disturb a few things.

In Jiang Yuyan's room.

As both entered the room, Lu Qiang spoke, "I hope Lu Lijun didn't trouble you much."

Stepping to go towards her wardrobe to pull out night pajama for herself, Jiang Yuyan replied, "What trouble? Because of him, I don't feel lonely when you are not around. He makes sure to be around me and take care of me." Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

"Good to hear it."

"When I was in a garden, he came and wrapped me into a shawl. So considerate he is."

"Hmm! After all, he is my brother."

"Huh?"

"We are together since the last few months but still you are a virgin, so don't you think I am considerate."

"Cough! Hmm!" she nodded and said while looking into the clothes in her hands, "I will change into it" and moved to the bathroom.

Jiang Yuyan went to the bathroom and Lu Qiang went to the gallery, standing there looking at the starry sky. The snowfall started soon to cover the whole palace in a white color sheet.

Jiang Yuyan came out of the bathroom. Seeing Lu Qiang standing in the gallery she went to him and stood beside him near the railing.

"Ohh! Snowfall."

"Hmm!" Lu Qiang nodded

"I was happy that it was late this year."

"Why? You don't like snowfall," He asked

"I like it at the start but later when it covers the whole place in just white color. I don't like it," She replied.

“Why?” he asked.

“Because I can't see all the colors around. Trees flowers everything is covered in snow and I like to see colorful things.”

Lu Qiang was listening to her.

“Moreover, this too much cold weather doesn't suit me. I like the warmer one.”

“Really?” saying it, Lu Qiang pulled her towards him and said, “It's good news then. I think I will like winter even more from now on.”

“Why?”

“As cold weather doesn't suit you, I will be here to warm you up and you won't say no to me. Won't it be nice?” he asked.

“Hmm! That way you would be with me all the time.”

“Right! Aren't you feeling cold in just night pajama?”

Jiang Yuyan nodded, “Hmm! It's cold.”

“Let's warm you up then,” saying it Lu Qiang lifted her in his arms and took her inside.

Putting her on a bed he hovered over her being ready to kiss, just then Jiang Yuyan spoke, “Wait!”

He looked at her with a questioning gaze and she replied, “Don't you want to change?”

“No need as clothes are going to come off anyway.”

“But...”

“Shhhh! You talk too much,” saying it Lu Qiang kissed her.

---

Note: A request to all the readers. Please don't write a review on the novel only having so many SMILEYS and HEARTS with five stars to it. The review with few words about the novel would be appreciated.

# 366 Lu Qiang's Visit To Xi Cheng...

The next day, instead of his office, Lu Qiang went to the Xi business office.

The moment Lu Qiang's car stopped in front of the building, security guards recognized who was inside the car. Stepping out of the car, Lu Qiang went inside the building along with Xi Cheng and no one dared to ask him anything. The aura Lu Qiang carried was enough to make them stay away from his way. Moreover, everyone was aware of this great president of Lu Qiang.

Without asking a single word, the security head led his way to Xi Cheng's office. Soon the news of Lu Qiang being in there spread everywhere and all the employees were eager for one glimpse of this amazingly handsome and talented businessman in a stylish black suit.

Xi Cheng got informed that Lu Qiang was coming to his office. "President Lu is coming to see me. It's surprising," Xi Cheng said. He was sitting in his chair. Though he looked calm, his eyes behind that golden rim looked evil. His stylish grey suit, his neatly set hair and his fake smile were not enough to hide his evil intentions.

"What should we do boss?" His assistant asked who was standing in front of his table after giving Xi Cheng news of Lu Qiang's arrival.

Xi Cheng smirked and asked, "Can we do anything other than letting him in?"

"No!" the assistant replied.

"So stop asking useless questions," saying it Xi Cheng waited for Lu Qiang to come to his office.

Giving out a deep sigh Xi Cheng said again, "I wish if I could cut his wings in the past but that bastard happened to be too

smart to defeat him. I underestimated him. With his father, he should have been in that car too so that Lu corporation would have been under our control to some extent instead of us being under his control.”

The assistant nodded as he was known to all the planning pulled up by Xi Cheng all these years after being with him for so long.

The door of the office opened and Lu Qiang entered inside. Seeing him Xi Cheng stood up from the chair to greet him. “Welcome President Lu, how come you thought to visit here?”

Lu Qiang sat on the sofa without saying a single word. Xi Cheng went to the sofa too and sat opposite to Lu Qiang. Not getting a reply from Lu Qiang he said, “Anyways glad to see you here.”

“I hope you really are,” Lu Qiang said sarcastically.

Xi Cheng smiled not replying to Lu Qiang’s words and said, “May I know the purpose of this sudden visit after so many years.”

Last time, Lu Qiang visited this place was when he was trying to protect Lu Corporation after his father’s accident and he had to visit Xi Cheng to show his place.

Lu Qiang ignored his question and said, “Your chair looks comfortable than this sofa to sit on it.”

Hearing it, Xi Cheng’s expressions changed but he immediately controlled himself. Lu Qiang was referring to the chair of the president of Xi Businesses and if he mentioned it suddenly that scared Xi Cheng from inside.

In the past, they agreed to not meddle in each other’s businesses and maintain peace but this sudden arrival of Lu Qiang threatened Xi Cheng.

“It’s not as comfortable as yours in the Lu Corporation, president Lu,” Xi Cheng said.

“That I know but still I am thinking if I should try this one too,” Lu Qiang replied calmly having as usual cold



expressions on his face but behind that calmness, there was a sign of thunder.

“Haha! Even president Lu’s jokes can scare a person. I am so impressed.”

“Do I look like I am joking?” Saying it Lu Qiang starred in his eyes and that made Xi Cheng come to the point as he already knew why Lu Qiang was there. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

“I know why you are here but what I did was for the sake of my sister and for our business,” Finally Xi Cheng spoke.

Lu Qiang didn’t say a single word as he was not satisfied by Xi Cheng’s explanation.”

“You know my sister holds all the power in her hand and how valuable she is. I was just making sure that if she was in safe hands and the man she was going around with can he actually protect her.”

Lu Qiang still didn’t say a word so Xi Cheng continued, “Is it wrong to think about to protect my sister?”

“You know better what you were doing so I won’t waste my time to tell you. Just keep in mind, if you want to continue sitting on this chair, don’t try to pull out stunts,” Lu Qiang said coldly as he was warning him.

Xi Cheng was speechless as it was a direct threat from Lu Qiang and he tried to change the topic, “I won’t but this way I got to know about the one more good quality of doctor Jiang Yang. He has more worth other than just having president Lu as his brother-in-law.”

“He doesn’t need this president Lu with him to prove his worth. Whatever he is, it’s just him. Don’t underestimate him thinking that he is just a doctor and knows nothing other than treating his patients.” Lu Qiang looked confident about his friend and his abilities.

“How can I underestimate after watching him that day.” Xi Cheng replied.

Just then Xi Cheng's assistant came to him and passed him a tablet in his hands. Reading what was written in it, the color on Xi Cheng's face disappeared.

Just then Xiao Min offered Xi Cheng's assistant a file and said, "Signature is needed here."

Opening the file and looking at the documents inside his assistant was shocked and passed it to Xi Cheng. When Xi Cheng saw it, he asked, "This..."

"Nothing much. I just decided to test you the way you like to test others, so sign it," Lu Qiang replied calmly.

## 367 Pissed of Xi Cheng...

“Nothing much. I just decided to test you the way you like to test others, so sign it,” Lu Qiang said coldly.

“But this was supposed to be not meddled by you. This business is under me and my other business partner,” Xi Cheng said.

“I got so many requests from other people to look into this business as the people around there and the employees are not happy with it. Even your business partner came to me so I decided to test you if you can make it better for the people around. If not, then I have to take all the requests from those people into consideration.”

Xi Cheng went through the papers and he knew he had no other option as most of the part of that particular business was taken under control by the Lu corporation. He signed it and passed the file to his assistant.

From inside he was angry because if he couldn't prove it, he was going to lose one of the most important and profitable businesses to Lu Corporation.

Getting up from the sofa, Lu Qiang said, “I hope you will be able to prove your worth to me just like my friend Jiang Yang was able to prove it to you.” Saying this, he left the office.

Once Lu Qiang left, Xi Cheng kicked the glass center table as he was pissed of and that ended into the breaking of the glass. His assistant went to him and asked, “Are you okay, boss?”

“No, but soon I will be okay.” Getting back to his chair, Xi Cheng sat in it and said, “Let him be happy for some time and celebrate it. One day will come when he won't be able to do it.”

His expressions were calm but his grey eyes were never able to hide the devil inside him. All these years he kept silent as he got what he desired for but soon the days were going to come

when whatever was in his hands, he might lose and he was determined to not let it go, whatever it will take to do so.

Coming out of his office, Lu Qiang was smiling with one corner of his lips curved up and said, "That was a nice sound."

"Huh! Which one?" Xiao Min asked.

"The sound of breaking of glass," Lu Qiang replied.

"Where? I didn't hear." Saying it, Xiao Min looked around to check.

Lu Qiang didn't reply to him and stepped into the elevator.

Getting inside the car, Lu Qiang made a call. "It's started. Now it's time to be ready with the next things."

"Thank you so much, president Lu," The person on the other line replied.

"No need. I had my own reasons for doing this as he troubles the person dear to me," Lu Qiang said.

"I am sorry for that. Because of my daughter and our problems, doctor Jiang Yang had to face it."

"It's fine as my friend is not someone to get bullied that easily."

"Glad to know it."

"If there is something that I can help you with, let me know."

"I will!"

Saying it both hung up the call.

Soon the snowfall covered the whole city. with people covering themselves from head to toe in warm clothes making them unable to recognize. Days were passing by normally, He everyone being busy in their lives.

Jiang Yuyan never liked the snow covering the whole place as she thought the environment around her looks less lively. Everywhere just white color and all places are less crowded

Lu Qiang ordered winter clothes for her already but she never liked to wear those warm and heavy clothes.

One fine morning when Lu Qiang and Jiang Yuyan were sleeping together while covering themselves in a thick blanket, Lu Qiang opened his eyes and looked at his woman who was sleeping soundly beside him.

He continued staring at her and suddenly she spoke, without opening her eyes, “Stop looking at me and let me sleep.”“Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

“I am not asking you to wake up. You do your thing and let me do what I want,” Lu Qiang replied.

“If you keep staring at me, I won’t be able to sleep.”

“You should be thankful that I am just staring and not doing anything to you.”

“Is there anything that you didn’t do?”

“Hmm! There is but I am waiting for our wedding to be done or right now you would have been under me.” He had a teasing smile on his face.

“Cough!” Getting out of the bed in a hurry, she said, “Get up and go to work.”

“Trying to get away from me huh? Are you scared I might do something?”

Chuckling lightly she said, “Scared? And me? I am just going to get fresh,” she denied.

“Really?” saying it, Lu Qiang stepped out of the bed and before she could move even a single step away from him, he held her tightly and said, “Let’s do it now then as you are not scared.”

She tried to get out of his hold but he lifted her surrounding his hands tightly around her waste and carried her to the bed with her feet few inches above the floor.

Putting her back in a bed he hovered over being ready to kiss by pinning her hands in a bed on either side.

“Stop! Not now,” She exclaimed.

“You said, you are not scared so why am I waiting for so many days?” saying it, he started to kiss her neck.

Gasping for air she said, “I...I was joking.”

Lu Qiang stopped what he was doing and said, “I am not serious either.”

Jiang Yuyan gave out of the sigh of relief and he said again, “The day when we would be doing it, that would be the most special day and not like this randomly.”

Jiang Yuyan blushed to hear it. Getting out of the bed, Lu Qiang helped her getting up too and said, “By the way, that day is not far now as in the next few months, we are getting married so prepare yourself for the day.”

## 368 My Bad...

Jiang Yuyan looked at him with her eyes wide opened and he asked, “Don’t you want to get married?”

She nodded and said, “I want to.”

“Then what is with this look. Are you scared of that thing?” he asked.

She shook her and said, “N-No!”

Leaning closer to her, he whispered in her ear, “Don’t worry, I will try to be as much as gentle I can.”

Gulping, she moved back and said, “It’s not that. Getting married is going to be a new turn in my life. I never thought about it until a few months back and now suddenly so many things changed.

“Hmm! I understand. Even if we would be married, there won’t be any changes in our life so don’t feel pressured. Things would be just as it is they are now,” he said and she smiled.

That day in the evening there was gathering for the people for the business world and all the famous businessmen were going to be there to attend it. Lu Qiang was going to be busy for the whole day till late night so he informed Jiang Yuyan not to wait for him.

Jiang Yuyan was going to be bored the whole day again so Lu Qiang asked her to go out with someone. Jiang Yuyan had no friends there other than her childhood friends so she was thinking who to take with her. Lu Bao and Lu Lian were not around as they went to another city to aunt Lu Zhilan’s home so that they could spend some time on their vacation with Wang Shu.

Before leaving for the office, Lu Qiang asked Jiang Yuyan, “So with whom are you planning to go out? I will ask the driver to take you wherever you want to go.”

“There is no one I could go with so I will go alone,” Jiang Yuyan replied.

“Why don’t you ask Nixxie to join you?” Lu Qiang suggested.

Hearing it, Jiang Yuyan exclaimed, “How did I forget about her? Let me ask her.”

Jiang Yuyan asked Nixxie and she agreed. The plan was fixed and both ladies decided to meet at one of the famous malls in the city.

Before leaving the mansion, Lu Qiang hugged her and said, “Make sure to wear warm clothes because it’s cold outside.” Jiang Yuyan nodded.

A servant brought a black color winter coat for him to wear. Once he was done, Jiang Yuyan said, “You are looking really eye-catching in this coat.”

Lu Qiang smiled to hear it and said, “Really? I thought I was more eye-catching when I am not wearing anything.”

Jiang Yuyan was stunned to hear it and looked around to see if there was anyone so he said again, “Don’t worry, no one is here.” Saying it kissed her on the forehead and left saying bye.

Lu Qiang sat in the car and called Jiang Yang. Before he could say hello, Lu Qiang spoke, “Your woman is going out with my woman.”

Jiang Yang was about to get in his car to go to the hospital when Lu Qiang called. Hearing what Lu Qiang said, something clicked in his mind and he said, “Thanks for informing me.”

Lu Qiang intentionally called Jiang Yang to inform him as to give him an opportunity to see Nixxie. Since the day of their date, Nixxie avoided to go out with Jiang Yang or to meet him in every way possible. She was scared for him to get harmed by her step-brother.

As it was the winter vacation, there was no chance that Jiang Yang could see her in the university by going there with the excuse of seeing his sister. Most of the time in the night, Jiang



Yang waited in his car outside of the Xi residence just to get a single glimpse of her by chance but it never happened. Whenever he called her, she just spoke a few words and conversation ended just in a minute.

Jiang Yang knew why she was doing it and it was understandable but his heart was not allowing him to be in peace. He wanted to see her desperately, also he was worried for her because of her step-brother. He wanted to visit her in her home but Lu Qiang advised him not to do anything that she didn't want and hold back for some time.

Lu Qiang could understand Jiang Yang's condition as he was not able to see her so he just wanted to create a small opportunity for him. If Lu Qiang wanted, there was not a big deal for him to get Jiang Yang to see her but they preferred to be silent for some time as Lu Qiang knew there were few important things to be done than these simple ones.

In the afternoon, Jiang Yuyan got ready. She went through her wardrobe and smiled to see all the winter wears arranged there by Lu Qiang for her. She pulled out a beige color, full sleeves winter jacket long up to her knees.

She wore a white full-sleeves white T-shirt and blue jeans with the winter jacket on it. She never preferred to use makeup so applying just a moisturizer on her face, lip gloss on her lips. And with her hair left open, she was ready to out. There was a pair of winter boots for her. Wearing the black one out of all, she went out of the room. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

As she reached downstairs, there was no one so she moved to the door of the mansion as the car was ready for her outside of the door. Just then someone called her, "Yuyan!"

Stopping in her tracks, she turned to look back. Lu Lijun was standing there looking at her.

"You called me, Lu Lijun?" she asked him.

"As you can see there is no one around so it is obviously me." Replying, he stepped towards her and said, "Are you going

out?”

“As I am ready in these clothes so it’s obvious I am going out.” This time Jiang Yuyan didn’t avoid to reply him back in his style.

“Hmm! My bad,” He said.

## 369 Caring Lu Lijun...

When Jiang Yuyan was expecting an argument from him, he accepted his defeat and she said, "I thought you will reply to me again with sarcastically."

"There are other important things to do than just arguing with you."

"Huh? You are the one who...."

"Where are your hand gloves, scarf, and cap?" Without letting her complete her line, he asked.

Saying this, he called the servant who was available around and told him to bring a pair of hand gloves scarf and cap, before Jiang Yuyan could say anything. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

When the servant went to bring the stuff told by Lu Linun Jiang Yuyan said, "I am fine without them."

Lu Lijun looked at her and said coldly. "Do you want to fall sick and make elder brother worried for you? He is already so busy with other things."

Hearing him, Jiang Yuyan couldn't say a word as Lu Lijun was right. In a while, a servant came and stood up there with the things in his hands those were asked by Lu Lijun.

Grabbing the pair of hand gloves from the servant, Lu Lijun signaled her to put forward her hands. She put forward her right hand and said, "Give it to me. I can do it myself."

"If you are that smart then you should have done it before." Saying it he started to put one glove in her right hand and once he was done, he held her left hand and put the glove on it too.

Jiang Yuyan was smiling to see how calmly and with the focus he was doing it and she let him do it. Lu Lijun grabbed the cap and looked at her. He was shorter than her in height so she had to bend down a little so that he could put a cap on her head.

Understanding him, Jiang Yuyan bent down and let him do his work. She knew, even if she said she will do it, he won't listen and thought, 'This little iceberg is cute sometimes just like his brother.'

Next, Lu Lijun put on a scarf around Jiang Yuyan's neck and said, "Now you can go."

With the cute red cap on her head and gloves in her hand, she was looking like a cute doll wearing a heavy winter coat. She was looking adorable with a cap and her hair left open with a scarf around her neck.

"Hmm!" Nodding Jiang Yuyan left to go out of the mansion where the car was waiting for her while Lu Lijun looking at her retreating back saying, "Still a kid."

"Kid? Huh?"

Suddenly a voice disturbed Lu Lijun. He turned his head to see Lu Feng was standing beside him.

"Hmm! Kid! Elder brother is going to have too much work while looking after her," Lu Lijun replied.

Giving out a little laugh, Lu Feng asked, "Then what are you?"

"I am a kid but at least I can take care of myself." Lu Lijun replied.

Lu Feng nodded and said, "That is right, but let her be like this as she deserves to be childish at least now as she couldn't do it when she was supposed to be"

"Huh? What do you mean by that elder brother?" Lu Lijun asked.

Lu Feng realized what he said just now and made himself correct, "She was in another country for a long time with foreigners so as she is back now, let her be like this with her own people."

Lu Lijun nodded, "Hmm! I didn't say she should change but what should I call a kid other than that."

"Haha! You are right." Lu Feng laughed and Lu Lijun too was smiling.

Lu Feng came out of the mansion and after sitting in his car, he messaged Lu Qiang and sent him a video file saying, ‘I don’t want you to regret for not being able to watch something interesting.’ Once he was done, he drove outside of the mansion.

Lu Qiang was in a meeting when he received the message from Lu Feng. Seeing Lu Feng’s message, he read it but the video file he decided to watch it later and asked everyone to make it faster and finish the meeting.

Going back to the office, Lu Qiang opened the video file without waiting for a single moment and sat in his chair. Seeing the video he was smiling

When Lu Lijun and Jiang Yuyan were in the living room and Lu Lijun was asking her where were her other warm clothes, Lu Feng happened to come to the living room too. Seeing Lu Lijun bossy but caring for her, Lu Feng felt happy and wanted to show it Lu Qiang too. Without wasting time, he shot the video on his mobile.

Once he was done watching the video, Lu Qiang called Lu Feng and said, “Thank you so much.”

“No need. I thought it’s not fair to enjoy the nice scene alone,” Lu Feng replied.

“Hmm! Still thanks for being so thoughtful,” Lu Qiang said.

“No need. I just thought to be a good friend and a brother at least once.”

“Hmm! Thanks for being a good friend and a brother.”

“No need...” Lu Feng stopped for a while and asked, “I am going to continue this. Are you willing to say thank you for everything?”

I won’t get tired of saying ‘Thank you’ even for a whole day,” Lu Qiang replied while smiling.

Giving out a deep sigh, Lu Feng said, “Man! Stop being with Jiang Yang. You are sounding like him. I just got the feeling that I am talking to my lover.”

Hearing it, Lu Qiang laughed. “Stop laughing, Lu Qiang,” Lu Feng said.

“Okay, I will. Just send me one more video then.”

“What video?” Lu Feng asked curiously.

“I want to see how you are looking right now, frowning like a bull,” Lu Qiang replied.

“Seriously, you are being like Jiang Yang. I will break his legs if he shows up around you. He is spoiling my brother.”

## 370 Surprised Nixxie And Jiang Yuyan..

“Seriously, you are being like Jiang Yang. I will break his legs if he shows up around you. He is spoiling my brother,” Lu Feng frowned.

“Don’t worry. Today is a happy day for him so instead of cursing, pray for your darling.”

“Happy day? Is he finally getting to see her?” Lu Feng asked.

“Yes!”

“Good to hear it but how?”

“Yuyan called her out for shopping,” Lu Qiang replied

“It must be your plan, Lu Qiang.”

“Hmm! Can’t see my friend upset,” Lu Qiang replied.

Nixxie and Jiang Yuyan met at the mall in the center of the city. It was the most famous and luxurious mall.

“Thanks for coming, Nixxie.”

“It’s fine because I wanted to get out of the home too. Instead, I should say thanks for inviting me.”

Just when both of these women stepped to go inside the mall, Lu Qiang’s driver came and greeted Jiang Yuyan. Looking at him surprisingly, Jiang Yuyan asked, “What are you doing here?”

Jiang Yuyan knew that the driver was always present wherever Lu Qiang could be and for a moment she thought, Lu Qiang came there.

The driver passed one small black cardholder to her and said, “Boss asked me to give to you.”

“What is this?” Saying it she opened it and one black card was there. She understood what it was and pushing back the card

inside the cardholder she handed it back to the driver.

The driver was shocked and said, “But... “Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

“I don’t need it,” she said before he could a word. The driver looked in a dilemma not knowing what to do as it was like he was not able to do what his boss asked for.

Seeing his puzzled face, Jiang Yuyan spoke, “Don’t worry, I will talk to him.”

The driver went back and informed Lu Qiang about what happened. Lu Qiang immediately called Jiang Yuyan. As she received the call while going through the clothes in one store, Lu Qiang spoke, “Why did you return the card?”

“Because I don’t need it,” She replied.

“But I wanted you to use it.”

“Do you think of me as one poor lead female character from the dramas where the girl needs the money and her rich boyfriend hand her over his black card?” Jiang Yuyan asked and Nixxie who was beside her was smiling to hear it.

Lu Qiang smiled and asked, “Instead of using your parent’s money, why not use your husband’s money?”

“Who said I am using my parent’s money?” She asked.

“Then?”

“Your woman is young to be independent yet but I can earn money for myself.”

“How come I don’t know where you worked?”

“It was in the USA when I earned enough dollars through my paintings.”

“Ohh! My wife is really something. Yet to know so many things about her.”

Jiang Yuyan smiled to hear it and Lu Qiang spoke again, “Still I want you to use it as I will feel good to see my woman spending my money.”



“You just wait. After our wedding, I am gonna rip you off of money like those gold diggers evil women in dramas.”

“I don’t mind if you rip me off of money or rip off my clothes every night.”

“Cough! I need to go. See you in the evening.” With what Lu Qiang said, her face was red.

On the other side,, Lu Qiang was smiling showing his cute canine thinking how adorable his woman was.

Nixxie and Yuyan did some shopping for themselves and suddenly Jiang Yuyan’s sight caught something and she stopped in front of one men’s winter clothing showroom. There was one mannequin that had a black and stylish winter coat on it. The moment she saw it, in her mind an image flashed, Lu Qiang wearing that coat and looked amazingly handsome in it.

Without a second thought, Jiang Yuyan entered the shop with Nixxie following her.

“What do you think about it?” Jiang Yuyan asked to look at Nixxie.

Taking a look at the winter coat from top to bottom, Nixxie answered, “It’s really stylish and it will look awesome on the person you are planning to buy it for.

Hearing Nixxie, something came up in Jiang Yuyan’s mind and she asked. “How about brother Yang? Will it look good on him?”

This question startled Nixxie and she replied while avoiding to look at Jiang Yuyan, “This winter coat will look good on anyone.”

Jiang Yuyan smiled to see Nixxie flustered. She was used to seeing Nixxie always being strong, straightforward and more like a tigress but just the name of her brother could make this tigress turn into a sheep.

Jiang Yuyan finalised that winter coat and sales girl went to pack it up just then Jiang Yuayn’s sight fell on one more thing. In the same showroom, there was a section for teenager boys

too and Jiang Yuyan was observing one full-sleeved, hooded winter jacket that had an animated picture of cute bunny carrying a carrot in his hands.

Jiang Yuyan went near to it and holding in her hand she asked Nixxie, "Isn't it so cute?"

"It's for teenagers. Whom are you buying it for?"

"There is one cute little iceberg around me who is younger than me but behaves like he is older and I am the younger one by taking care of me so I want to buy it for him.

"Your younger brother-in-law?" Nixxie asked.

Jiang Yuyan nodded, "Hmm! The one who doesn't want to call me as sister-in-law."

Paying the bill, both stepped out of the showroom with lots of shopping bags in their hands.

"I am hungry. Let's eat something," Jiang Yuyan said as it was lunch time.

Nixxie nodded and one voice surprised them.

"Let's go then, I am starving to death."

Both turned their heads to look at the source of the voice and that was Jiang Yang who was standing beside them.

Nixxie was shocked to see him while Jiang Yuyan exclaimed, "Brother Yang." Both looked surprised to see him..

## 371 Old Nixxie Is Back...

Jiang Yang was standing there looking at both the ladies with a smile on his face. He was wearing a long black winter coat and looked amazingly handsome. The smile on his lips was so charming that made Nixxie skipped her heart a beat. She never expected to see him there and his sudden appearance shocked her but in her heart, she was glad to see him. She couldn't realize that she was staring at him.

Jiang Yang said while looking at Jiang Yuyan, "I know you missed me a lot and you are happy to see me here" and then moved his sight to Nixxie as if that line he said was for her. She immediately averted her sight from him.

Jiang Yuyan knew why his brother said it and stayed silent with a smile on her face, not wanting to say anything between those two.

"I am starving. What you guys want to eat?" Jiang Yang asked while looking at both of them.

Nixxie didn't reply and Jiang Yuyan said, whatever you want, brother."

"Across the road, there is a nice restaurant, let's go there." Saying it, he led the way for them with these women following him with the shopping bags in their hands.

Suddenly Nixxie noticed that Jiang Yang was not wearing any other winter clothes other than his coat and rolled her eyes thinking 'How careless! but she didn't say anything in real.

Jiang Yuyan noticed Nixxie's sight and asked, "Brother why are you wearing just winter coat, where is hand gloves and all. It's too cold outside. Nixxie was secretly taking a glimpse of his back as she couldn't stop herself.

"Don't worry. I am fine like this," Jiang Yang replied while leading their way to outside of the mall.

Jiang Yang finished his emergency work in the hospital and the moment he was free, he hurriedly put on his winter coat

and forgot to wear other things as he wanted to see Nixxie as soon as possible. When he came out of the hospital, feeling the cold breeze, he realized, he forgot to wear hand gloves and scarf in a hurry but he didn't go back and came just like that.

Hearing her brother's words 'Don't worry, I am fine like this', Jiang Yuyan suddenly remembered the incident when Lu Lijun was asking her the same thing and how he made her wear everything before going out. She couldn't help but smile as she understood what he was feeling at the moment as she was feeling the same for her brother, worried to catch a cold.

When they reached out of the mall, it was way too cold and Jiang Yang had to rub his hands as he felt the cold breeze of wind.

Nixxie frowned to see it but still didn't say anything. Suddenly Jiang Yuyan exclaimed, "Ohh! I forgot something in that store. Let me get it back." Saying it, she dashed inside the mall, leaving these two alone.

Jiang Yang was still rubbing his hands to warm his palms. He thought to talk to Nixxie just then she turned around to go somewhere so Jiang Yang asked, "Where are you going?"

Turning back to face him, she replied, "I need five minutes. Wait here."

"Don't tell me that you are running away from me," he said teasingly.

"I want to but right now I can't as I can't upset Jiang Yuyan."

Stepping towards her, he grabbed the shopping bags from her hands and said, "Let me carry it for you."

Before Nixxie could reject his offer, the shopping bags were already in his hands. She frowned and left.

Looking at her retreating back, Jiang Yang smiled and said to himself, "Seems like old Nixxie is back. Hmm! I like it."

Suddenly his phone rang and he received it. He was talking for a while when Nixxie came back with one tiny shopping bag in her hand.

Jiang Yang hung up the call and looked at her as she offered a shopping bag to him saying, "This is for you."

"For me?" he was surprised but soon those surprised expressions were replaced by the happy ones.

"Hmm! She nodded.

"What is this," he asked receiving a shopping bag from her hand.

"I think, God has given us a pair of eyes to see," she replied.

"Ohh! I forgot. My bad." saying it he looked inside in the bag while his other hand was busy carrying other shopping bags. Nixxxie offered to take her shopping bags back from Jiang Yang's hand but he pulled his hand back and replied, "Let it be."

He looked so determined that she couldn't say it again. When Jiang Yang saw what was inside the bag, he looked at her and said, "So you do care for me, huh?"

"I never knew that doctors are so careless when it comes to taking care of themselves," she replied sarcastically.

"If you will take care of me always like this, I won't mind being careless."

She heard it but didn't reply to him. Just then Jiang Yang said, "Help me with this." he was asking her to help him wear the hand gloves and scarf she bought for him. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

"You have hands. Use them," Nixxxie said and looked at the direction of the mall to see where was Jiang Yuyan.

"My one hand is busy so I can't do it by just with one hand," Jiang Yang was determined to make her do it for him.

"Give me those bags."

"No! Either you help me wear them or I won't."

Giving out a deep sigh, Nixxxie grabbed a shopping bag from his hand and pulled out a pair of black hand gloves and a scarf. Holding one hand glove she looked at him as saying give me

your hand. Jiang Yang put forward his hand and Nixxie started to put it on.

Once she was done with hand gloves, she held a scarf in her hand and said, "You can put it on by yourself now."

Jiang Yang shook his head as saying 'No'.

# 372 I Can Dare Only If You Allow Me...

Frowning Nixxxie stepped closer to him to wrap a scarf around his neck. He was tall, so it was not that easy for her unless he bent down forward a little. As he was not understanding her difficulty, she stared into his eyes.

Jiang Yang noticed her gaze and said, "I have a backache today so I can't bend down."

Nixxxie was boiling with anger from inside because of the silly excuse but didn't say anything. Tiptoeing, she tried to wrap a scarf around his neck and Jiang Yang said again, "Make sure to circle it twice around my neck without a single fold on it and tie a proper knot."

Nixxxie didn't say a word and started to do what he asked for that made her stand closer to him. This is what Jiang Yang wanted. He didn't help her at all and stood there straight, not willing to make it easy for her to let her stand closer to her for some more time.

Nixxxie once lost her balance and held onto his arm as she was trying to circle the scarf around his neck without leaving a fold anywhere. Still, Jiang Yang didn't buzz and stood straight enjoying the closer view of her face and feeling her sweet breath.

Doing so, Nixxxie could feel his gaze on her face and his hot minty breath. It didn't take much time to make her heart beat faster. As she was done, she immediately stood away from him not making eye contact.

"You were so loud. You know?" Jiang Yang said.

"Loud?" She looked at him to know what was he talking about?

"Your heart beats were too loud for me to hear them just like that."

“My heart is normal. You must have heard something else.”  
She denied even though she knew it was the truth.

“Let me check then if I am wrong,” he said as being ready to step towards her.

Taking a step away from him, she exclaimed, “You pervert. Stay away from me.”

“Pervert huh? What is so bad in checking the heartbeats. I do it daily.” Saying it he stepped towards her.

Nixxxie immediately tightened her winter coat around her chest. Seeing it, Jiang Yang didn't know what to say and laughed.

“It's not funny.” She glared at him.

“It is. What are you so scared about? I was going to check your wrist,” He replied carrying a teasing smile on his face.

Hearing it, Nixxxie felt embarrassed and speechless. Moving closer to her, he whispered in her ear, “I don't mind doing it in your way though.”

“Nixxxie's face turned red and one could see how red her earlobes turned, like a cherry. Jiang Yang noticed it and said, “I think you are feeling too cold. Do you want me to warm you up?”

“Don't you dare.” nixxxie said while feeling his hot breath on her earlobe. Both were still standing closer ignoring the people passing by.

“I can dare only if you will allow me.”

“That won't happen ever.”

“But that day you liked it.” Jiang Yang was referring to their kiss in the hotel room.

Nixxxie gulped to hear it and Jiang Yang stepped back not willing to tease her more. He understood the reason for the sudden change in her behavior and she was not wrong. The girl who had lost someone precious in the past, it was obvious for her to react in this way when she realized one more precious person in her life can be in trouble.



Jiang Yang didn't want to force her for anything and let her be the way she wanted until things resolved. Just then Jiang Yuyan returned back and said, "I am sorry. It took a long time. Let's go now."

Three of them went to the restaurant on the other side of the road. Jiang Yang sat beside Jiang Yuyan and Nixxie sat opposite to them across a square-shaped four-seater table.

After giving an order for the food, Nixxie excused herself to go to the washroom. Once she left, Jiang Yang looked at his sister and asked, "What exactly you left back in the store?"

Jiang Yuyan smiled and replied, "Whatever it might be but aren't you happy that I left both of you alone?"

Jiang Yang smiled and replied, "I always knew, my sister is very smart."

"At least more than you."

"I will accept it as you made my day so no argument with you."

"Are you that happy?" Jiang Yuyan asked.

"Imagine yourself in my place and Lu Qiang on hers."

"Hmm! I understand."

In a while, Nixxie came back and the food they ordered arrived too. After having just a few bites, Jiang Yang's cell phone rang. He saw the message on it and said, "Sorry ladies, I have to leave as it's an emergency." "Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

Pulling out a card from his wallet, he put it on the table and said, "This lunch is on me." He stood up from the chair and went to Nixxie's side. She looked up at him and before she could understand, he pecked on her lips and said, "Take care princess. Hope to see you soon."

Without giving her a chance to react, he left in a hurry and Nixxie just continued staring at his retreating back. Jiang Yuyan quietly continued eating her food and didn't disturb Nixxie.

Once Jiang Yang was out of her sight, Nixxie looked at Jiang Yuyan with embarrassed expressions but seeing Jiang Yuyan was busy eating, she gave out a sigh of relief and continued eating her food.

Both just talked about the things in university and finished lunch. After paying a bill from her brother's card, Jiang Yuyan passed that card to Nixxie and said, "Can you give it back to my brother?"

"Me?" Nixxie asked.

Jiang Yuyan nodded, "Hmm! Lu Mansion is too far from here and it will take me too much time to go to my brother and then go back home in this condition as roads are covered in snow. You live near the hospital so I hope it won't be a trouble for you. Moreover, he is too busy that we don't meet often to give it back to him and what if there is an emergency and he needs it?"

# 373 Were You Not Worried About Me?

Jiang Yuyan tried to pull out all the possible reasons that way it was fair to ask Nixxie to do so while Nixxie was looking at her. She knew what Jiang Yuyan was trying to do but all of her excuses were not wrong too. It was dangerous for Jiang Yuyan to go back home so late when roads might be blocked because of snowfall. Nixxie was worried about her friends' safety.

Accepting the card from Jiang Yuyan without asking a further question, Nixxie said "Okay!"

Hearing it, Jiang Yuyan smiled and said, "Thank you." While walking out of the restaurant, Jiang Yuyan spoke again, "I wonder if he will eat anything or not. He must be busy and when he will be free, he will eat something from the hospital cafeteria. Sometimes I feel that while treating his patients, he should not fall sick."

Nixxie was listening to everything silently and said looking at Jiang Yuyan's worried face, "Don't worry, he is a doctor so he can take care of himself."

"He can but when it comes to his work, he forgets everything and I am sure he won't eat anything till dinner," Jiang Yuyan replied.

Nixxie's expressions changed as she felt worried about Jiang Yang. she remembered, he was not able to have a few bites of food properly and he had to leave in a hurry.

After roaming here and there for a while, both decided to head back home and went to their respective cars.

Nixxie reached home early as her home was not that far. Going back to her room, she lied in bed as she was tired. As she closed her eyes she remembered about the time she spent with Jiang Yang, a smile appeared on her lips. Suddenly she

remembered the moment he pecked her and his words, calling her princess with love for her in his eyes.

The moment, a memory of him leaving the restaurant flashed in front of her eyes and she got up from the bed as she realized, hours passed by and she didn't know if he ate anything or not.

Nixxie dialed Jiang Yang's number but there was no response so she called to the hospital's inquiry section that was only meant for VIP patients. As her mother was a VIP patient, she had access to it. Calling to the hospital she asked if doctor Jiang Yang was there and she got the reply that he was in the surgery and in the next two hours he will be free.

Nixxie waited for an hour and asked the servant to prepare food and pack it properly to take out. Waiting for an hour, she called the hospital again and asked if Jiang Yang was free.

The person on the other line thought that there must be an emergency that Nixxie called back again and he said, "Miss. If there is an emergency, you can bring the patient here. Doctor Jiang Yang just came out of the surgery and he can check the patient."

Hearing it, a smile flashed across Nixxie's face and she hung up the call after saying "Thank you."

Nixxie informed her mother that she is going out for some time and went out after grabbing the boxes in which she packed food for Jiang Yang. She didn't call Jiang Yang and reached the hospital. She went to Jiang Yang's cabin, not knowing if he was there or not.

Taking a deep breath, she knocked on the door and a low voice could be heard from inside, "Come in."

Nixxie opened the door and entered the room just then Jiang Yang spoke while leaning back in his chair with his eyes closed, "I was waiting for you." He looked tired.

Nixxie startled to hear the line 'I was waiting for you' but she stepped towards his table and putting on the bag in her hand on the table she pulled out a card from her winter coat, "Your card."

Jiang Yang opened his eyes to look at her and continued staring without saying a single word.

Feeling uncomfortable under his gaze, Nixxie spoke while standing, "Jiang Yuyan asked me to give it to you."

"So you came here to give me this card?" he asked.

"Hmm! She nodded and said while signaling towards the bag she just kept on the table, "Also, this is for you."

"What is this?" he asked.

"Jiang Yuyan was worried that you won't be able to eat properly so to ease her worries, I brought this for you," She replied. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

"Hmm! My sister really cares for me a lot," he said but there was sarcasm in his tone as he knew Nixxie brought it here as she was worried for him but she wanted to hide it by taking Jiang Yuyan's name.

"She does," Nixxie agreed.

"And you?" He asked.

Nixxie didn't know how to answer him. She cared for him and that care made her come to him but she didn't want to admit it.

He realized, she was still standing and seeing she was not able to answer him, he said, "Have a seat."

"It's late. I should go now. Make sure to finish the food," she said.

"Hmm!" Jiang Yang nodded.

The moment she turned to leave, Jiang Yang felt restless as if he won't be able to breathe if she left at the moment. Getting out of his chair, he hurriedly stepped towards her and hugged her from behind. Nixxie was caught off guard as she didn't expect this.

All these days, he missed her and he couldn't even get to see her for even a single moment. he was being patient but as she

was here, he didn't want her to leave that soon.

Resting his chin on her shoulder he asked, "Were you really not worried for me?"

Nixxie gulped to hear it but couldn't muster up the courage to say 'No' to him as it would be a lie. The first time she felt that he was tired. The way he was standing putting his wait on her, she could see, he really needed to rest.

# 374 Time To Deal With A Family...

Realizing how tired Jiang Yang was Nixxie didn't try to move away from him. Caressing his hand that was surrounding her stomach she said, "You should rest as you look really tired."

"You didn't answer me," he said ignoring what she said.

"First eat something and we can talk later," she said still not willing to answer him.

"I don't want to eat." He was like a kid who won't listen until he gets what he wanted.

"If you won't eat, I won't stay here for a single moment," she said, as she was not in a mood to handle that kid's tantrums.

"So, will you stay here till I finish the food?" Jiang Yang asked, still holding her in his embrace.

"Hmm!" she nodded.

"Let's go inside then." Saying it, he grabbed the bag brought by her and both went inside to his resting place.

When they reached the coffee table, Nixxie grabbed the bag from his hands and said, "Sit here. I will do it."

Jiang Yang smiled to see her caring side that she was trying to hide and continued staring at her. Nixxie could feel his sight on her but she didn't look at him even once and continued unpacking the boxes.

Seeing all the food and smelling the delicious aroma, he asked, "It looks like homemade food."

"Hmm! It's from my home. I thought you should eat something healthy so...."

"So you were actually worried about me," he asked not letting her finish her line.

Nixxie ignored what he said. She sat in the chair and passed him a spoon. Jiang Yang accepted it and taking food in it, he offered it to her.

“It’s for you.”

“I know but I also know that you are yet to have dinner. Moreover, I don’t like to eat alone.” Saying this, he continued holding the spoon in front of her signaling to eat. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

“But I brought only one spoon,” she said hesitantly.

“So what. It’s fine as long as you are not poisonous and I won’t die.”

She frowned to hear it but obediently ate it as Jiang Yang was still holding a spoon in front of her. He too ate with the same spoon. Dinner continued, him feeding her and himself. All the time she was looking at him thinking about how loving and caring a person can be.

When they finished all the food and done cleaning everything, Nixxie said, “I will take a leave now.”

“Can you not stay here for some time more?” Jiang Yang asked.

“No!” she replied firmly straight away.

Jiang Yang gave out a deep sigh as he knew he couldn’t force her and accepted her wish.

Looking at his sad face, she said, “You should go home too. You should have a proper rest at a comfortable place.”

Jiang Yang nodded though he previously planned to sleep in this small room but as his woman was asking him to go home with so much care, he couldn’t say no to her.

Both went out of the hospitals to get into their cars. Saying bye to him, when Nixxie was about to sit in her car, Jiang Yang called her, “Nixxie!”

Nixxie turned to look at him.

“When can I expect to see you again?” He asked.



“I don’t know,” she replied.

“What should I do so that I can see you often?”

“There is no need to see each other, It’s not like we are in a relationship and we are dating,” she replied without a tinge of hesitation on her face.

“Let’s date then,” Jiang Yang said.

“I don’t want to.”

“Why?” he asked.

Nixxie had a serious expression on her face and replied, “You know the condition in my family.”

“Hmm! So!”

“So you can understand why I can’t date anyone. My family condition doesn’t allow me to.”

“Family, huh?”

“Yes and I hope we won’t discuss it again,” saying it, Nixxie sat in the car and left.

Jiang Yang was standing in his place with his hands tucked in pockets, looking at the car, disappearing from his sight and said, “Family!”

Giving out a deep sigh he said again, “Looks like I have to deal with a family first.” He had a smile on his face and he looked like he had something planned in his mind. Sitting in a car, he left too.

In Lu Mansion.

Someone was being restless as Jiang Yuyan didn’t return even after it was dark. Lu Lijun was sitting in a living room silently, having no expression on his face but his sight was continuously following the main door of Lu Mansion. A small sound of any movement from the door side was making him think that Jiang Yuyan was back.

Lu Bao and Lu Lian were back from their aunt’s home and they were sharing the things with their grandparents about what they did at their aunt’s home. Everyone around noticed

what Lu Lijun was doing so elder Lu asked, “What happened Lu Lijun. Why are you looking at the door continuously?”

“Nothing grandpa. I was just thinking that why Yuyan is not back yet. It’s dark already and it’s dangerous outside with snow everywhere,” Lu Lijun replied calmly.

“Don’t worry. She will be back.” Elder Lu assured.

“She went out for the shopping, Lu Lijun so it’s obvious to take time,” Lu Lian said.

Hearing it, Lu Lijun gave out a deep sigh and said, “Girls and their shopping. Too annoying.”

“Everything we girls do is always annoying for you, Lu Lijun,” Lu Bao said.

“Then stop doing such things, sister,” Lu Lijun said looking at his sister.

There was no word to say and Lu Bao kept silent and asked Lu Lian, “What is it with him? He is different nowadays.”

“Nothing! He is just worried about Jiang Yuyan,” Lu Lian replied.

In a few minutes, there was a sound of a car stopping in front of the door and Jiang Yuyan entered the Mansion with few shopping bags in her hands.

# 375 Started To Like Cute Things...

Jiang Yuyan went to the sofa where everyone was sitting and greeted them.

“How was the day, dear?” elder Lu asked.

“It was good grandpa,” Jing Yuyan replied with a smile.

“Thank god you are back. Lu Lijun was worried for you,” Lu Lian said.

Looking at Lu Lijun, Jiang Yuyan asked, “Really?”

“As elder brother is not home so...” he stopped and others understood.

“What did you bought?” Lu Bao asked.

“Just some random stuff,” she replied and looked at Lu Lijun, “I bought something for Lu Lijun too.”

Hearing it, Lu Lijun looked at her, “For me?”

“Hmm!” Nodding Jiang Yuyan separated one shopping bag from her hand while her other hand was busy holding a few more bags.

Grandma Zhao Shuang asked servant to get those bags from her hands and keep it in Jiang Yuyan’s room.

Having a smile on her face, Jiang Yuyan passed him a bag saying, “For you.”

Lu Lijun accepted it. “Thank you.”

“Show us what it is?” Lu Bao and Lu Lian said excitedly at the same time and others were eager to see what was in the bag.

Just then Lu Qiang arrived. When he saw all are in the living room and Jiang Yuyan was back, he went there to see what was going on and stood beside Jiang Yuyan. Just then Lu Lian said, “Elder brother, Jiang Yuyan bought gift for Lu Lijun.”

“Ohh! Let me see then,” Lu Qiang said.

Lu Lijun pulled out a sweatshirt that Jiang Yayan bought for him. It was a white color, hooded sweatshirt that had one cute animated bunny on the front side with the background of light green color. The bunny had a carrot in his hand. The bunny was too cute with his round and bright blue eyes with his two front teeth showing clearly having cute expressions.

Seeing the bunny on it, Lu Bao and Lu Lian laughed and Lu Lian said, “Isn’t it too cute for him to wear?”

“It is cute but we know Lu Lijun doesn’t like cute things,” Lu Bao said and everyone heard it.

What Lu Bao said was not wrong as Lu Lijun never wore such clothes as he never liked to be cute. He always preferred to wear plain clothes with no such cute prints.

Others felt bad as to know, Lu Lijun will reject the gift bought by Jiang Yuyan. Moreover, they were aware that no one can advise him to keep it as it was bought by Jiang Yuyan so that she won’t feel bad.

Hearing what Lu Bao said, Jiang Yuyan looked at Lu Lijun and said, “Really? I didn’t know about it. I will change it for you to what you like.”

“No need because I liked it,” Lu Lijun replied calmly. All were stunned to hear it.

In the past, whoever bought such clothes or anything that seems cute like those of girls will like, he always rejected it. If someone forced him to accept it, later those things always ended up in a trash can. Hearing that he liked it, all couldn’t help but feel surprised when they were expecting that he will reject a gift.

“Lu Lijun, if you didn’t like it, no need to be humble. It’s okay as it’s not a big deal to change it,” Jiang Yuyan said.

Lu Qiang was standing there with a smiling face. He was not surprised by Lu Lijun’s actions like others were. Lu Qiang felt glad that his brother knew what should be the right thing to do and it showed that he was being matured now. Moreover, he

could see it was because Lu Lijun liked Jiang Yuyan and didn't want to do anything that could upset her.

"If you like it, then wear it and show us. We are dying to see you in cute clothes," Lu Bao said and Lu Lian nodded while others stayed silent, not willing to force him as they were glad to see, he at least accepted the gift.

"Okay!" saying it, Lu Lijun removed the sweater he was wearing over the black full sleeves warm T-shirt inside. Grabbing the sweatshirt bought by Jiang Yuyan, he wore it and looked at his sisters.

Lu Lijun had fair skin and sharp features like Lu Qiang. The only difference was, he was short in a hight and had baby fats as he was a kid. In that off-white sweatshirt, he looked smart and that bunny on gave him a look of one innocent cute kid, different from his Little iceberg look.

"You are looking too cute, Lu Lijun." These are the words from his mother Ning Jiahui.

She was happy to see her son wearing clothes like a kid. She never got to do anything for him as he always considered Lu Qiang his everything. Lu Qiang was both a mother and a father for him. She did her part as a mother but still, no one could be like Lu Qiang for him but slowly, Jiang Yuyan was becoming an important part of his life.

Hearing Ning Jiahui, others agreed too. Jiang Yuyan and Lu Qiang were happy too.

"Haven't you bought anything for an elder brother?" Lu Bao asked.

"I did," Jiang Yuyan replied and Lu Qiang looked at her to know what she bought. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

"Show us," Lu Lian asked.

"Servant took the bags inside my room," Jiang Yuyan said.

It's okay! You can show it to us after dinner," Lu Qiang said as it was almost dinner time.

After dinner, Lu Lian and Lu bao asked Jiang Yuyan to show what she bought for Lu Qiang. Jiang Yuyan took them to the room and showed it while Lu Qiang and Lu Lijun went to Lu Qiang's room, saying they had something to do and Jiang Yuyan can join them once these girls were done.

When Lu sisters left Jiang Yuyan's room, Jiang Yuyan picked up the shopping bag and went to Lu Qiang's room, where both brothers were doing something on the laptop while sitting on the couch.

=====

This novel belongs to "webnovel.com" and all the chapters are available exclusively on "webnovel.com" only.

## 376 First Time In Lu Qiang's Room...

Lu Qiang looked at Jiang Yuyan and asked her to sit. Sitting in one of the chairs, Jiang Yuyan passed the shopping bag in her hands to Lu Qiang. Lu Qiang had a smile on his face as his woman bought something for him.

“Brother wear it and show us,” Lu Lijun said.

Lu Qiang got up from the couch and wore the black winter coat while standing in front of the mirror. He turned to look at both of them. Jiang Yuyan looked at him with her eyes wide open to see how handsome he was looking in that coat.

He always looked handsome but her reaction was like this because he was wearing something bought by her and she couldn't help but admire him.

“How is it, Lu Lijun?” Lu Qiang asked.

“It's the really nice elder brother, I want to wear it too,” Said Lu Lijun.

“Okay! Come here,” saying it, Lu Qiang was about to take it off just then Lu Lijun spoke, “Not now elder brother as its size won't fit me.”

“Then?” Lu Qiang asked.

“I will wear it when I would be taller like you.”

“Hmm! That's a good idea. Then I will keep it safe until you become like me.”

Jiang Yuyan was happy that both liked what she bought for them and said, “Lu Lijun will look more handsome than you in this coat.”

Lu Qiang agreed and said, “Not a doubt as he is the most handsome man in this family.”

“Both of you, are you trying to flatter me? No need because I already know I am handsome,” Lu Lijun said confidently without blinking an eye and looked like he was not joking.

Jiang Yuyan and Lu Qiang both smiled to hear it and didn't say anything but both meant what they said- Lu Lijun was going to be the most handsome man in the family.

Lu Qiang took off the winter coat and stepped towards the wardrobe. The wardrobe had one section that was empty and it had a glass door. One could see what was inside.

There was only one jacket hanging that he took out and hung the winter coat in it. Turning around to look at Lu Lijun, he said, “This coat will be here always. Even if I will wear it, it will be here only. The day when you will feel like you can wear it, just go ahead and do it.

Lu Lijun nodded and said, “I will.”

That night, Lu Qiang asked Jiang Yuyan to sleep in his room as they never slept in his room before. It was always Jiang Yuyan's room, they shared.

Looking at the huge king size bed, Jiang Yuyan said, “It will be the first time that I am going to sleep here.”

“I found your room better as I can feel your presence in everything there and don't worry, in the next few months you will be sleeping in this bed, always,” Lu Qiang replied that made her blush.

Lying in a bed, while Jiang Yuyan lying beside him with her head resting on his arm, Lu Qiang said, “Lu Lijun likes you now.”

“I think so too.” Jiang Yuyan agreed.

“More than that, he respects you and cares for you.”

“Is it?”

“Hmm!”“Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

“Well, I am glad to know it.”



“He would have rejected that sweatshirt you bought if the person was someone else instead of you but he accepted it and he will like it too.”

“Are you sure that he will wear it? Jiang Yuyan asked.

“Yes!” Lu Qiang replied and after some talking and teasing both fell asleep.

The Next Morning In Jiang residence.

Jiang Yang was ready to go out of the home early even though it was not a time to go to the hospital yet. He sat in his car and looked like he was thinking about something but there was a smile on his face.

Soon the car stopped in front of Xi residence. Jiang Yang got out of the car and entered inside. Song Meilin was waiting for him as Jiang Yang already informed her that he was coming to meet her.

“Welcome doctor Jiang Yang,” she said.

Nodding with a smile, Jiang Yang went with her to the sofa in the living room and sat there. Jiang Yang’s eyes looked around in the living room and noticing it, song Meilin said, “Nicky is in her room as she is getting ready.”

Jiang Yang gave a little nod. When Jiang Yang informed Song Meilin he asked her that all the family members should be there so song Meilin invited him for breakfast as it was the time when all are mostly available. Song Meilin didn’t consider other members as a family but Jiang Yang insisted her to have everyone there. Soon it was breakfast time and all came to the living room, Xi Cheng and his mother, Nixxie’s father and Nixxie herself too.

Seeing Jiang Yang there early in the morning, she felt worried and asked, “Mom are you fine? Is there any problem that doctor Jiang Yang is here?”

Everyone looked at Song Meilin when Nixxie asked her this.

“There is nothing wrong with your mother’s health. I am here for something related to me,” Jiang Yang replied instead of Song Meilin.

---

\*\*For the readers, who wants to read the present situation between Jiang Yuyan and adult Lu Lijun. A glimpse...

Jiang Yuyan opened her eyes as she woke up but her vision was blurry as she had a high fever the previous night. Realizing someone was standing near the wardrobe in her room, she looked in the direction while rubbing her eyes to see clearly. Her head was still spinning.

She looked at the man who was standing facing his back towards her, wearing a winter coat bought by her for Lu Qiang in the past. A wide smile painted on her lips and getting out of the bed in a hurry, she back hugged the man saying, “Lu Qiang. Where were you?”

A man gulped to get a back hug from her and couldn't move. When she released her strong grip around him, the man turned to make the smile on her lips to disappear in the next moment and she exclaimed, “L-Lu Lijun?”

=====

Note

Get all the latest chapters of the novel on “webnovel.com”

To interact personally with the author “mynovel20” -

1) get to the comment section of the novel on “webnovel.com”

OR

2) Join the discord server with link given below-

<https://discord.gg/8QvQn3Y>

# 377 I Want To Date Your Daughter...

Note- content has been upgraded..

“There is nothing wrong with your mother’s health. I am here for something related to me,” Jiang Yang said.

Hearing it, all looked at Jiang Yang, in surprise. The atmosphere in the Living room became tense, especially around Xi Cheng.

Maintaining his calm, Xi Cheng asked, “How can we help you, Doctor Jiang Yang?”

With a pleasant expression on his face, Jiang Yang looked at Xi Cheng and said, “I am not here to get any kind of help.”

“Doctor Jiang Yang is a friend of President Lu, so I don’t think he needs any help from us. I am sure he is here for something really important as he personally came her,” Song Meilin said to mock Xi Cheng.

Ignoring what Song Meilin said, Xi Chen asked, “Then, what can we do for you?” Xi Cheng was feeling uneasy from inside though he looked calm from outside.

Before Jiang Yang could answer, Xi Guiren spoke, “You treated my wife really well. Even if it was your job, Xi family owe you for this so feel free to say whatever you want.”

“I am here to get permission from all the Xi family members,” Jiang Yang replied.

“Permission?” Han Ju asked having so many questions in her mind.

“I want permission to date your daughter, Nicky,” Jiang Yang replied calmly while looking at Nixxxie’s parents. There was no sign of hesitation on his face as for him what he was doing was the right thing to do and there was nothing wrong with it.

No one expected him to say it. All were so shocked that they didn't know what to say. Nixxie was feeling like to bury herself somewhere a few feet under the ground and stay there forever. She couldn't help but exclaim, "W-What are you saying?"

"Haven't you said before that you can't date me or any other man because of your family so I am here to get permission from your family itself," Jiang Yang replied having the same calm and pleasant expression on his face.

Hearing it, all looked at Nixxie just then Jiang Yang spoke again, "Mr. and Mrs. Xi, I need your permission but I don't want you to give it to me just because I treated Mrs. Xi or you owe me anything. I want you to trust me with your daughter that she will always be happy with me."

Song Meilin was happy from inside and she wanted to say 'Yes' at the very moment as she knew her daughter really liked Jiang Yang but she suppressed her excitement and said, "What can we say? It's all up to my daughter who she wants to date." Song Meilin wanted her daughter to take a decision on her own.

"Good to hear it but still I want to know if the family had any objection on it?" Jiang Yang looked at Nixxie's parents to know what they want to say.

Xi Guiren looked at his wife as asking what to do. Song Meilin looked back at him and gave a little nod trying to hide her how happy she was.

"We will go with what our daughter's wish is," Xi Guiren replied.

Xi Cheng was a little shocked to hear it and said, "Father! How can we...."

"She is adult enough to make her decisions on her own, Xi Cheng so I think we should not meddle in her life," Xi Cheng spoke, not giving Xi Cheng a chance to complete his line.

"Honey, still it's our duty to not let her follow the wrong path," Han Ju said. Find authorized novels in Webnovel ,

faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

“It’s the right time to let her decide her own path and let her learn what his wrong or right. Even if she goes on the wrong path, she is too young and it won’t be late for her to turn back and follow the right path,” Xi Guiren replied not giving up in front of mother-son duo.

Song Meilin was amazed to see how Xi Guiren was answering them and thought, ‘Even though he doesn’t care about me, he still cares for his daughter’.

“But still, how can we trust a stranger with our daughter?” Han Ju said.

Hearing ‘our daughter’ words from Han Ju, Song Meilin felt annoyed and said, “She is my daughter and I am the only one who has a right to care for her and make a decision for her. Others don’t need to bother themselves with it.”

Han Ju stayed silent while Xi Cheng didn’t try to say anything as he knew there was no use. When these family members were talking, Jiang Yang was looking at Nixxie to see her reaction not minding what these people were talking about. He was just waiting for the end result.

Jiang Yang finally asked, “Nicky! I hope now you don’t have any problem as your family has no objection.”

Nixxie felt trapped because of her own words she said to him the previous day and now there was no other reason she could come with, to reject him. Just then Song Meilin spoke, “Let’s have breakfast first and later you can solve this between just both of you.”

Jiang Yang nodded and all went for breakfast. On the dining table, Xi Guiren enquired about Jiang Yang’s personal things from his family, education and his life till now, though he already knew everything about him.

The day in the hospital, when Xi Cheng mentioned Jiang Yang to his father, Xi Guiren asked his sources to get information about him. As Xi Cheng personally showed interest in a

person that means there was something and Xi Guiren knew his son really well.

From what information Xi Guiren got about Jiang Yang and after meeting him personally, Xi Guiren thought of him as a nice person and had no objection if his daughter was willing to date him. Moreover, the condition that was set with his daughter, he always expected to have a genuine man for her who won't go after the power she held in her hand. In short, he wanted a man for his daughter who was exactly opposite to his own self.

=====

Note - kindly read the author's thought..

# 378 Had Breakfast With Future In-Laws...

Note- read the author's thought at the bottom of the page first.

Lu Qiang looked at Jiang Yuyan and asked her to sit. Sitting in one of the chairs, Jiang Yuyan passed the shopping bag in her hands to Lu Qiang. Lu Qiang had a smile on his face as his woman bought something for him.

"Brother wear it and show us," Lu Lijun said.

Lu Qiang got up from the couch and wore the black winter coat while standing in front of the mirror. He turned to look at both of them. Jiang Yuyan looked at him with her eyes wide open to see how handsome he was looking in that coat.

He always looked handsome but her reaction was like this because he was wearing something bought by her and she couldn't help but admire him.

"How is it, Lu Lijun?" Lu Qiang asked.

"It's the really nice elder brother, I want to wear it too," Said Lu Lijun.

"Okay! Come here," saying it, Lu Qiang was about to take it off just then Lu Lijun spoke, "Not now elder brother as its size won't fit me."

"Then?" Lu Qiang asked.

"I will wear it when I would be taller like you."

"Hmm! That's a good idea. Then I will keep it safe until you become like me."

Jiang Yuyan was happy that both liked what she bought for them and said, "Lu Lijun will look more handsome than you in this coat."

Lu Qiang agreed and said, "Not a doubt as he is the most handsome man in this family."

“Both of you, are you trying to flatter me? No need because I already know I am handsome,” Lu Lijun said confidently without blinking an eye and looked like he was not joking.

Jiang Yuyan and Lu Qiang both smiled to hear it and didn't say anything but both meant what they said- Lu Lijun was going to be the most handsome man in the family.

Lu Qiang took off the winter coat and stepped towards the wardrobe. The wardrobe had one section that was empty and it had a glass door. One could see what was inside.

There was only one jacket hanging that he took out and hung the winter coat in it. Turning around to look at Lu Lijun, he said, “This coat will be here always. Even if I will wear it, it will be here only. The day when you will feel like you can wear it, just go ahead and do it.

Lu Lijun nodded and said, “I will.”

That night, Lu Qiang asked Jiang Yuyan to sleep in his room as they never slept in his room before. It was always Jiang Yuyan's room, they shared.

Looking at the huge king size bed, Jiang Yuyan said, “It will be the first time that I am going to sleep here.”

“I found your room better as I can feel your presence in everything there and don't worry, in the next few months you will be sleeping in this bed, always,” Lu Qiang replied that made her blush.

Lying in a bed, while Jiang Yuyan lying beside him with her head resting on his arm, Lu Qiang said, “Lu Lijun likes you now.”

“I think so too.” Jiang Yuyan agreed.

“More than that, he respects you and cares for you.”

“Is it?”

“Hmm!”

“Well, I am glad to know it.”

“He would have rejected that sweatshirt you bought if the person was someone else instead of you but he accepted it and



he will like it too.”

“Are you sure that he will wear it? Jiang Yuyan asked.

“Yes!” Lu Qiang replied and after some talking and teasing both fell asleep.

The Next Morning In Jiang residence.

Jiang Yang was ready to go out of the home early even though it was not a time to go to the hospital yet. He sat in his car and looked like he was thinking about something but there was a smile on his face.

Soon the car stopped in front of Xi residence. Jiang Yang got out of the car and entered inside. Song Meilin was waiting for him as Jiang Yang already informed her that he was coming to meet her.

“Welcome doctor Jiang Yang,” she said.

Nodding with a smile, Jiang Yang went with her to the sofa in the living room and sat there. Jiang Yang’s eyes looked around in the living room and noticing it, song Meilin said, “Nicky is in her room as she is getting ready.”

Jiang Yang gave a little nod. When Jiang Yang informed Song Meilin he asked her that all the family members should be there so song Meilin invited him for breakfast as it was the time when all are mostly available. Song Meilin didn’t consider other members as a family but Jiang Yang insisted her to have everyone there. Soon it was breakfast time and all came to the living room, Xi Cheng and his mother, Nixxxie’s father and Nixxxie herself too.

Seeing Jiang Yang there early in the morning, she felt worried and asked, “Mom are you fine? Is there any problem that doctor Jiang Yang is here?”

Everyone looked at Song Meilin when Nixxxie asked her this.

“There is nothing wrong with your mother’s health. I am here for something related to me,” Jiang Yang replied instead of Song Meilin.

---

\*\*For the readers, who wants to read the present situation between Jiang Yuyan and adult Lu Lijun. A glimpse...

Jiang Yuyan opened her eyes as she woke up but her vision was blurry as she had a high fever the previous night. Realizing someone was standing near the wardrobe in her room, she looked in the direction while rubbing her eyes to see clearly. Her head was still spinning.

She looked at the man who was standing facing his back towards her, wearing a winter coat bought by her for Lu Qiang in the past. A wide smile painted on her lips and getting out of the bed in a hurry, she back hugged the man saying, "Lu Qiang. Where were you?"

A man gulped to get a back hug from her and couldn't move. When she released her strong grip around him, the man turned to make the smile on her lips to disappear in the next moment and she exclaimed, "L-Lu Lijun?"

=====

Note

Get all the latest chapters of the novel on "webnovel.com"  
Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

To interact personally with the author "mynovel20" -

1) get to the comment section of the novel on "webnovel.com"

OR

2) Join the discord server with the link given below-

<https://discord.gg/8QvQn3Y>

## 379 Trying To Manipulate...

Note- read the author's note

Lu Qiang looked at Jiang Yuyan and asked her to sit. Sitting in one of the chairs, Jiang Yuyan passed the shopping bag in her hands to Lu Qiang. Lu Qiang had a smile on his face as his woman bought something for him.

“Brother wear it and show us,” Lu Lijun said.

Lu Qiang got up from the couch and wore the black winter coat while standing in front of the mirror. He turned to look at both of them. Jiang Yuyan looked at him with her eyes wide open to see how handsome he was looking in that coat.

He always looked handsome but her reaction was like this because he was wearing something bought by her and she couldn't help but admire him.

“How is it, Lu Lijun?” Lu Qiang asked.

“It's the really nice elder brother, I want to wear it too,” Said Lu Lijun.

“Okay! Come here,” saying it, Lu Qiang was about to take it off just then Lu Lijun spoke, “Not now elder brother as its size won't fit me.”

“Then?” Lu Qiang asked.

“I will wear it when I would be taller like you.”

“Hmm! That's a good idea. Then I will keep it safe until you become like me.”

Jiang Yuyan was happy that both liked what she bought for them and said, “Lu Lijun will look more handsome than you in this coat.”

Lu Qiang agreed and said, “Not a doubt as he is the most handsome man in this family.” Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click [www.webnovel.com](http://www.webnovel.com) for visiting.

“Both of you, are you trying to flatter me? No need because I already know I am handsome,” Lu Lijun said confidently without blinking an eye and looked like he was not joking.

Jiang Yuyan and Lu Qiang both smiled to hear it and didn't say anything but both meant what they said- Lu Lijun was going to be the most handsome man in the family.

Lu Qiang took off the winter coat and stepped towards the wardrobe. The wardrobe had one section that was empty and it had a glass door. One could see what was inside.

There was only one jacket hanging that he took out and hung the winter coat in it. Turning around to look at Lu Lijun, he said, “This coat will be here always. Even if I will wear it, it will be here only. The day when you will feel like you can wear it, just go ahead and do it.

Lu Lijun nodded and said, “I will.”

That night, Lu Qiang asked Jiang Yuyan to sleep in his room as they never slept in his room before. It was always Jiang Yuyan's room, they shared.

Looking at the huge king size bed, Jiang Yuyan said, “It will be the first time that I am going to sleep here.”

“I found your room better as I can feel your presence in everything there and don't worry, in the next few months you will be sleeping in this bed, always,” Lu Qiang replied that made her blush.

Lying in a bed, while Jiang Yuyan lying beside him with her head resting on his arm, Lu Qiang said, “Lu Lijun likes you now.”

“I think so too.” Jiang Yuyan agreed.

“More than that, he respects you and cares for you.”

“Is it?”

“Hmm!”

“Well, I am glad to know it.”

“He would have rejected that sweatshirt you bought if the person was someone else instead of you but he accepted it and

he will like it too.”

“Are you sure that he will wear it? Jiang Yuyan asked.

“Yes!” Lu Qiang replied and after some talking and teasing both fell asleep.

The Next Morning In Jiang residence.

Jiang Yang was ready to go out of the home early even though it was not a time to go to the hospital yet. He sat in his car and looked like he was thinking about something but there was a smile on his face.

Soon the car stopped in front of Xi residence. Jiang Yang got out of the car and entered inside. Song Meilin was waiting for him as Jiang Yang already informed her that he was coming to meet her.

“Welcome doctor Jiang Yang,” she said.

Nodding with a smile, Jiang Yang went with her to the sofa in the living room and sat there. Jiang Yang’s eyes looked around in the living room and noticing it, song Meilin said, “Nicky is in her room as she is getting ready.”

Jiang Yang gave a little nod. When Jiang Yang informed Song Meilin he asked her that all the family members should be there so song Meilin invited him for breakfast as it was the time when all are mostly available. Song Meilin didn’t consider other members as a family but Jiang Yang insisted her to have everyone there. Soon it was breakfast time and all came to the living room, Xi Cheng and his mother, Nixxxie’s father and Nixxxie herself too.

Seeing Jiang Yang there early in the morning, she felt worried and asked, “Mom are you fine? Is there any problem that doctor Jiang Yang is here?”

Everyone looked at Song Meilin when Nixxxie asked her this.

“There is nothing wrong with your mother’s health. I am here for something related to me,” Jiang Yang replied instead of Song Meilin.

---

\*\*For the readers, who wants to read the present situation between Jiang Yuyan and adult Lu Lijun. A glimpse...

Jiang Yuyan opened her eyes as she woke up but her vision was blurry as she had a high fever the previous night. Realizing someone was standing near the wardrobe in her room, she looked in the direction while rubbing her eyes to see clearly. Her head was still spinning.

She looked at the man who was standing facing his back towards her, wearing a winter coat bought by her for Lu Qiang in the past. A wide smile painted on her lips and getting out of the bed in a hurry, she back hugged the man saying, "Lu Qiang. Where were you?"

A man gulped to get a back hug from her and couldn't move. When she released her strong grip around him, the man turned to make the smile on her lips to disappear in the next moment and she exclaimed, "L-Lu Lijun?"

=====

Note

Get all the latest chapters of the novel on "webnovel.com"

To interact personally with the author "mynovel20" -

1) get to the comment section of the novel on "webnovel.com"

OR

2) Join the discord server with link given below-

<https://discord.gg/8QvQn3Y>

# 380 Back-stabbers and Cowards..

Nore- read author's thought first.

Lu Qiang looked at Jiang Yuyan and asked her to sit. Sitting in one of the chairs, Jiang Yuyan passed the shopping bag in her hands to Lu Qiang. Lu Qiang had a smile on his face as his woman bought something for him.

“Brother wear it and show us,” Lu Lijun said.

Lu Qiang got up from the couch and wore the black winter coat while standing in front of the mirror. He turned to look at both of them. Jiang Yuyan looked at him with her eyes wide open to see how handsome he was looking in that coat.

He always looked handsome but her reaction was like this because he was wearing something bought by her and she couldn't help but admire him.

“How is it, Lu Lijun?” Lu Qiang asked.

“It's the really nice elder brother, I want to wear it too,” Said Lu Lijun.

“Okay! Come here,” saying it, Lu Qiang was about to take it off just then Lu Lijun spoke, “Not now elder brother as its size won't fit me.”

“Then?” Lu Qiang asked.

“I will wear it when I would be taller like you.”

“Hmm! That's a good idea. Then I will keep it safe until you become like me.”

Jiang Yuyan was happy that both liked what she bought for them and said, “Lu Lijun will look more handsome than you in this coat.”

Lu Qiang agreed and said, “Not a doubt as he is the most handsome man in this family.”

“Both of you, are you trying to flatter me? No need because I already know I am handsome,” Lu Lijun said confidently without blinking an eye and looked like he was not joking.

Jiang Yuyan and Lu Qiang both smiled to hear it and didn't say anything but both meant what they said- Lu Lijun was going to be the most handsome man in the family.

Lu Qiang took off the winter coat and stepped towards the wardrobe. The wardrobe had one section that was empty and it had a glass door. One could see what was inside.

There was only one jacket hanging that he took out and hung the winter coat in it. Turning around to look at Lu Lijun, he said, “This coat will be here always. Even if I will wear it, it will be here only. The day when you will feel like you can wear it, just go ahead and do it.

Lu Lijun nodded and said, “I will.”

That night, Lu Qiang asked Jiang Yuyan to sleep in his room as they never slept in his room before. It was always Jiang Yuyan's room, they shared.

Looking at the huge king size bed, Jiang Yuyan said, “It will be the first time that I am going to sleep here.”

“I found your room better as I can feel your presence in everything there and don't worry, in the next few months you will be sleeping in this bed, always,” Lu Qiang replied that made her blush.

Lying in a bed, while Jiang Yuyan lying beside him with her head resting on his arm, Lu Qiang said, “Lu Lijun likes you now.”

“I think so too.” Jiang Yuyan agreed.

“More than that, he respects you and cares for you.”

“Is it?”

“Hmm!”

“Well, I am glad to know it.”

“He would have rejected that sweatshirt you bought if the person was someone else instead of you but he accepted it and



he will like it too.”

“Are you sure that he will wear it? Jiang Yuyan asked.

“Yes!” Lu Qiang replied and after some talking and teasing both fell asleep.

The Next Morning In Jiang residence.

Jiang Yang was ready to go out of the home early even though it was not a time to go to the hospital yet. He sat in his car and looked like he was thinking about something but there was a smile on his face.

Soon the car stopped in front of Xi residence. Jiang Yang got out of the car and entered inside. Song Meilin was waiting for him as Jiang Yang already informed her that he was coming to meet her.

“Welcome doctor Jiang Yang,” she said.

Nodding with a smile, Jiang Yang went with her to the sofa in the living room and sat there. Jiang Yang’s eyes looked around in the living room and noticing it, song Meilin said, “Nicky is in her room as she is getting ready.”

Jiang Yang gave a little nod. When Jiang Yang informed Song Meilin he asked her that all the family members should be there so song Meilin invited him for breakfast as it was the time when all are mostly available. Song Meilin didn’t consider other members as a family but Jiang Yang insisted her to have everyone there. Soon it was breakfast time and all came to the living room, Xi Cheng and his mother, Nixxxie’s father and Nixxxie herself too.

Seeing Jiang Yang there early in the morning, she felt worried and asked, “Mom are you fine? Is there any problem that doctor Jiang Yang is here?”

Everyone looked at Song Meilin when Nixxxie asked her this.

“There is nothing wrong with your mother’s health. I am here for something related to me,” Jiang Yang replied instead of Song Meilin.

---

\*\*For the readers, who wants to read the present situation between Jiang Yuyan and adult Lu Lijun. A glimpse...

Jiang Yuyan opened her eyes as she woke up but her vision was blurry as she had a high fever the previous night. Realizing someone was standing near the wardrobe in her room, she looked in the direction while rubbing her eyes to see clearly. Her head was still spinning.

She looked at the man who was standing facing his back towards her, wearing a winter coat bought by her for Lu Qiang in the past. A wide smile painted on her lips and getting out of the bed in a hurry, she back hugged the man saying, "Lu Qiang. Where were you?"

A man gulped to get a back hug from her and couldn't move. When she released her strong grip around him, the man turned to make the smile on her lips to disappear in the next moment and she exclaimed, "L-Lu Lijun?"

=====

Note

Get all the latest chapters of the novel on "w e b n o v e l . c o m"

To interact personally with the author "mynovel20" -

1) get to the comment section of the novel on "w e b n o v e l . c o m"

OR

2) Join the discord server with link given below-

<https://discord.gg/8QvQn3Y>

# 381 Going For Family Outing...

Note- read authors thought first..

Lu Qiang looked at Jiang Yuyan and asked her to sit. Sitting in one of the chairs, Jiang Yuyan passed the shopping bag in her hands to Lu Qiang. Lu Qiang had a smile on his face as his woman bought something for him.

“Brother wear it and show us,” Lu Lijun said.

Lu Qiang got up from the couch and wore the black winter coat while standing in front of the mirror. He turned to look at both of them. Jiang Yuyan looked at him with her eyes wide open to see how handsome he was looking in that coat.

He always looked handsome but her reaction was like this because he was wearing something bought by her and she couldn't help but admire him.

“How is it, Lu Lijun?” Lu Qiang asked.

“It's the really nice elder brother, I want to wear it too,” Said Lu Lijun.

“Okay! Come here,” saying it, Lu Qiang was about to take it off just then Lu Lijun spoke, “Not now elder brother as its size won't fit me.”

“Then?” Lu Qiang asked.

“I will wear it when I would be taller like you.”

“Hmm! That's a good idea. Then I will keep it safe until you become like me.”

Jiang Yuyan was happy that both liked what she bought for them and said, “Lu Lijun will look more handsome than you in this coat.”

Lu Qiang agreed and said, “Not a doubt as he is the most handsome man in this family.”

“Both of you, are you trying to flatter me? No need because I already know I am handsome,” Lu Lijun said confidently without blinking an eye and looked like he was not joking.

Jiang Yuyan and Lu Qiang both smiled to hear it and didn't say anything but both meant what they said- Lu Lijun was going to be the most handsome man in the family.

Lu Qiang took off the winter coat and stepped towards the wardrobe. The wardrobe had one section that was empty and it had a glass door. One could see what was inside.

There was only one jacket hanging that he took out and hung the winter coat in it. Turning around to look at Lu Lijun, he said, “This coat will be here always. Even if I will wear it, it will be here only. The day when you will feel like you can wear it, just go ahead and do it.

Lu Lijun nodded and said, “I will.”

That night, Lu Qiang asked Jiang Yuyan to sleep in his room as they never slept in his room before. It was always Jiang Yuyan's room, they shared.

Looking at the huge king size bed, Jiang Yuyan said, “It will be the first time that I am going to sleep here.”

“I found your room better as I can feel your presence in everything there and don't worry, in the next few months you will be sleeping in this bed, always,” Lu Qiang replied that made her blush.

Lying in a bed, while Jiang Yuyan lying beside him with her head resting on his arm, Lu Qiang said, “Lu Lijun likes you now.”

“I think so too.” Jiang Yuyan agreed.

“More than that, he respects you and cares for you.”

“Is it?”

“Hmm!”

“Well, I am glad to know it.”

“He would have rejected that sweatshirt you bought if the person was someone else instead of you but he accepted it and

he will like it too.”

“Are you sure that he will wear it? Jiang Yuyan asked.

“Yes!” Lu Qiang replied and after some talking and teasing both fell asleep.

The Next Morning In Jiang residence.

Jiang Yang was ready to go out of the home early even though it was not a time to go to the hospital yet. He sat in his car and looked like he was thinking about something but there was a smile on his face.

Soon the car stopped in front of Xi residence. Jiang Yang got out of the car and entered inside. Song Meilin was waiting for him as Jiang Yang already informed her that he was coming to meet her.

“Welcome doctor Jiang Yang,” she said.

Nodding with a smile, Jiang Yang went with her to the sofa in the living room and sat there. Jiang Yang’s eyes looked around in the living room and noticing it, song Meilin said, “Nicky is in her room as she is getting ready.”

Jiang Yang gave a little nod. When Jiang Yang informed Song Meilin he asked her that all the family members should be there so song Meilin invited him for breakfast as it was the time when all are mostly available. Song Meilin didn’t consider other members as a family but Jiang Yang insisted her to have everyone there. Soon it was breakfast time and all came to the living room, Xi Cheng and his mother, Nixxxie’s father and Nixxxie herself too.

Seeing Jiang Yang there early in the morning, she felt worried and asked, “Mom are you fine? Is there any problem that doctor Jiang Yang is here?”

Everyone looked at Song Meilin when Nixxxie asked her this.

“There is nothing wrong with your mother’s health. I am here for something related to me,” Jiang Yang replied instead of Song Meilin.

---

\*\*For the readers, who wants to read the present situation between Jiang Yuyan and adult Lu Lijun. A glimpse...

Jiang Yuyan opened her eyes as she woke up but her vision was blurry as she had a high fever the previous night. Realizing someone was standing near the wardrobe in her room, she looked in the direction while rubbing her eyes to see clearly. Her head was still spinning.

She looked at the man who was standing facing his back towards her, wearing a winter coat bought by her for Lu Qiang in the past. A wide smile painted on her lips and getting out of the bed in a hurry, she back hugged the man saying, "Lu Qiang. Where were you?"

A man gulped to get a back hug from her and couldn't move. When she released her strong grip around him, the man turned to make the smile on her lips to disappear in the next moment and she exclaimed, "L-Lu Lijun?"

=====

Note

Get all the latest chapters of the novel on "w e b n o v e l . c o m"

To interact personally with the author "mynovel20" -

1) get to the comment section of the novel on "w e b n o v e l . c o m"

OR

2) Join the discord server with link given below-

<https://discord.gg/8QvQn3Y>

## 382 Sexy Legs...

Note- Read author's thought first..

Lu Qiang looked at Jiang Yuyan and asked her to sit. Sitting in one of the chairs, Jiang Yuyan passed the shopping bag in her hands to Lu Qiang. Lu Qiang had a smile on his face as his woman bought something for him.

“Brother wear it and show us,” Lu Lijun said.

Lu Qiang got up from the couch and wore the black winter coat while standing in front of the mirror. He turned to look at both of them. Jiang Yuyan looked at him with her eyes wide open to see how handsome he was looking in that coat.

He always looked handsome but her reaction was like this because he was wearing something bought by her and she couldn't help but admire him.

“How is it, Lu Lijun?” Lu Qiang asked.

“It's the really nice elder brother, I want to wear it too,” Said Lu Lijun.

“Okay! Come here,” saying it, Lu Qiang was about to take it off just then Lu Lijun spoke, “Not now elder brother as its size won't fit me.”

“Then?” Lu Qiang asked.

“I will wear it when I would be taller like you.”

“Hmm! That's a good idea. Then I will keep it safe until you become like me.”

Jiang Yuyan was happy that both liked what she bought for them and said, “Lu Lijun will look more handsome than you in this coat.”

Lu Qiang agreed and said, “Not a doubt as he is the most handsome man in this family.”

“Both of you, are you trying to flatter me? No need because I already know I am handsome,” Lu Lijun said confidently

without blinking an eye and looked like he was not joking.

Jiang Yuyan and Lu Qiang both smiled to hear it and didn't say anything but both meant what they said- Lu Lijun was going to be the most handsome man in the family.

Lu Qiang took off the winter coat and stepped towards the wardrobe. The wardrobe had one section that was empty and it had a glass door. One could see what was inside.

There was only one jacket hanging that he took out and hung the winter coat in it. Turning around to look at Lu Lijun, he said, "This coat will be here always. Even if I will wear it, it will be here only. The day when you will feel like you can wear it, just go ahead and do it.

Lu Lijun nodded and said, "I will."

That night, Lu Qiang asked Jiang Yuyan to sleep in his room as they never slept in his room before. It was always Jiang Yuyan's room, they shared.

Looking at the huge king size bed, Jiang Yuyan said, "It will be the first time that I am going to sleep here."

"I found your room better as I can feel your presence in everything there and don't worry, in the next few months you will be sleeping in this bed, always," Lu Qiang replied that made her blush.

Lying in a bed, while Jiang Yuyan lying beside him with her head resting on his arm, Lu Qiang said, "Lu Lijun likes you now."

"I think so too." Jiang Yuyan agreed.

"More than that, he respects you and cares for you."

"Is it?"

"Hmm!"

"Well, I am glad to know it."

"He would have rejected that sweatshirt you bought if the person was someone else instead of you but he accepted it and he will like it too."



“Are you sure that he will wear it? Jiang Yuyan asked.

“Yes!” Lu Qiang replied and after some talking and teasing both fell asleep.

The Next Morning In Jiang residence.

Jiang Yang was ready to go out of the home early even though it was not a time to go to the hospital yet. He sat in his car and looked like he was thinking about something but there was a smile on his face.

Soon the car stopped in front of Xi residence. Jiang Yang got out of the car and entered inside. Song Meilin was waiting for him as Jiang Yang already informed her that he was coming to meet her.

“Welcome doctor Jiang Yang,” she said.

Nodding with a smile, Jiang Yang went with her to the sofa in the living room and sat there. Jiang Yang’s eyes looked around in the living room and noticing it, song Meilin said, “Nicky is in her room as she is getting ready.”

Jiang Yang gave a little nod. When Jiang Yang informed Song Meilin he asked her that all the family members should be there so song Meilin invited him for breakfast as it was the time when all are mostly available. Song Meilin didn’t consider other members as a family but Jiang Yang insisted her to have everyone there. Soon it was breakfast time and all came to the living room, Xi Cheng and his mother, Nixxie’s father and Nixxie herself too.

Seeing Jiang Yang there early in the morning, she felt worried and asked, “Mom are you fine? Is there any problem that doctor Jiang Yang is here?”

Everyone looked at Song Meilin when Nixxie asked her this.

“There is nothing wrong with your mother’s health. I am here for something related to me,” Jiang Yang replied instead of Song Meilin.

---

\*\*For the readers, who wants to read the present situation between Jiang Yuyan and adult Lu Lijun. A glimpse...

Jiang Yuyan opened her eyes as she woke up but her vision was blurry as she had a high fever the previous night. Realizing someone was standing near the wardrobe in her room, she looked in the direction while rubbing her eyes to see clearly. Her head was still spinning.

She looked at the man who was standing facing his back towards her, wearing a winter coat bought by her for Lu Qiang in the past. A wide smile painted on her lips and getting out of the bed in a hurry, she back hugged the man saying, “Lu Qiang. Where were you?”

A man gulped to get a back hug from her and couldn't move. When she released her strong grip around him, the man turned to make the smile on her lips to disappear in the next moment and she exclaimed, “L-Lu Lijun?”

=====

Note

Get all the latest chapters of the novel on “w e b n o v e l . c o m”

To interact personally with the author “mynovel20” -

1) get to the comment section of the novel on “w e b n o v e l . c o m”

OR

2) Join the discord server with link given below-

<https://discord.gg/8QvQn3Y>

# 383 My Darling Is Innocent...

Note- Read the author's thought first..

Lu Qiang looked at Jiang Yuyan and asked her to sit. Sitting in one of the chairs, Jiang Yuyan passed the shopping bag in her hands to Lu Qiang. Lu Qiang had a smile on his face as his woman bought something for him.

“Brother wear it and show us,” Lu Lijun said.

Lu Qiang got up from the couch and wore the black winter coat while standing in front of the mirror. He turned to look at both of them. Jiang Yuyan looked at him with her eyes wide open to see how handsome he was looking in that coat.

He always looked handsome but her reaction was like this because he was wearing something bought by her and she couldn't help but admire him.

“How is it, Lu Lijun?” Lu Qiang asked.

“It's the really nice elder brother, I want to wear it too,” Said Lu Lijun.

“Okay! Come here,” saying it, Lu Qiang was about to take it off just then Lu Lijun spoke, “Not now elder brother as its size won't fit me.”

“Then?” Lu Qiang asked.

“I will wear it when I would be taller like you.”

“Hmm! That's a good idea. Then I will keep it safe until you become like me.”

Jiang Yuyan was happy that both liked what she bought for them and said, “Lu Lijun will look more handsome than you in this coat.”

Lu Qiang agreed and said, “Not a doubt as he is the most handsome man in this family.”

“Both of you, are you trying to flatter me? No need because I already know I am handsome,” Lu Lijun said confidently without blinking an eye and looked like he was not joking.

Jiang Yuyan and Lu Qiang both smiled to hear it and didn't say anything but both meant what they said- Lu Lijun was going to be the most handsome man in the family.

Lu Qiang took off the winter coat and stepped towards the wardrobe. The wardrobe had one section that was empty and it had a glass door. One could see what was inside.

There was only one jacket hanging that he took out and hung the winter coat in it. Turning around to look at Lu Lijun, he said, “This coat will be here always. Even if I will wear it, it will be here only. The day when you will feel like you can wear it, just go ahead and do it.

Lu Lijun nodded and said, “I will.”

That night, Lu Qiang asked Jiang Yuyan to sleep in his room as they never slept in his room before. It was always Jiang Yuyan's room, they shared.

Looking at the huge king size bed, Jiang Yuyan said, “It will be the first time that I am going to sleep here.”

“I found your room better as I can feel your presence in everything there and don't worry, in the next few months you will be sleeping in this bed, always,” Lu Qiang replied that made her blush.

Lying in a bed, while Jiang Yuyan lying beside him with her head resting on his arm, Lu Qiang said, “Lu Lijun likes you now.”

“I think so too.” Jiang Yuyan agreed.

“More than that, he respects you and cares for you.”

“Is it?”

“Hmm!”

“Well, I am glad to know it.”

“He would have rejected that sweatshirt you bought if the person was someone else instead of you but he accepted it and

he will like it too.”

“Are you sure that he will wear it? Jiang Yuyan asked.

“Yes!” Lu Qiang replied and after some talking and teasing both fell asleep.

The Next Morning In Jiang residence.

Jiang Yang was ready to go out of the home early even though it was not a time to go to the hospital yet. He sat in his car and looked like he was thinking about something but there was a smile on his face.

Soon the car stopped in front of Xi residence. Jiang Yang got out of the car and entered inside. Song Meilin was waiting for him as Jiang Yang already informed her that he was coming to meet her.

“Welcome doctor Jiang Yang,” she said.

Nodding with a smile, Jiang Yang went with her to the sofa in the living room and sat there. Jiang Yang’s eyes looked around in the living room and noticing it, song Meilin said, “Nicky is in her room as she is getting ready.”

Jiang Yang gave a little nod. When Jiang Yang informed Song Meilin he asked her that all the family members should be there so song Meilin invited him for breakfast as it was the time when all are mostly available. Song Meilin didn’t consider other members as a family but Jiang Yang insisted her to have everyone there. Soon it was breakfast time and all came to the living room, Xi Cheng and his mother, Nixxxie’s father and Nixxxie herself too.

Seeing Jiang Yang there early in the morning, she felt worried and asked, “Mom are you fine? Is there any problem that doctor Jiang Yang is here?”

Everyone looked at Song Meilin when Nixxxie asked her this.

“There is nothing wrong with your mother’s health. I am here for something related to me,” Jiang Yang replied instead of Song Meilin.

---

\*\*For the readers, who wants to read the present situation between Jiang Yuyan and adult Lu Lijun. A glimpse...

Jiang Yuyan opened her eyes as she woke up but her vision was blurry as she had a high fever the previous night. Realizing someone was standing near the wardrobe in her room, she looked in the direction while rubbing her eyes to see clearly. Her head was still spinning.

She looked at the man who was standing facing his back towards her, wearing a winter coat bought by her for Lu Qiang in the past. A wide smile painted on her lips and getting out of the bed in a hurry, she back hugged the man saying, "Lu Qiang. Where were you?"

A man gulped to get a back hug from her and couldn't move. When she released her strong grip around him, the man turned to make the smile on her lips to disappear in the next moment and she exclaimed, "L-Lu Lijun?"

=====

Note

Get all the latest chapters of the novel on "w e b n o v e l . c o m"

To interact personally with the author "mynovel20" -

1) get to the comment section of the novel on "w e b n o v e l . c o m"

OR

2) Join the discord server with the link given below-

<https://discord.gg/8QvQn3Y>

## 384 Ready To Play...

Note- read authors thought first..

Lu Qiang looked at Jiang Yuyan and asked her to sit. Sitting in one of the chairs, Jiang Yuyan passed the shopping bag in her hands to Lu Qiang. Lu Qiang had a smile on his face as his woman bought something for him.

“Brother wear it and show us,” Lu Lijun said.

Lu Qiang got up from the couch and wore the black winter coat while standing in front of the mirror. He turned to look at both of them. Jiang Yuyan looked at him with her eyes wide open to see how handsome he was looking in that coat.

He always looked handsome but her reaction was like this because he was wearing something bought by her and she couldn't help but admire him.

“How is it, Lu Lijun?” Lu Qiang asked.

“It's the really nice elder brother, I want to wear it too,” Said Lu Lijun.

“Okay! Come here,” saying it, Lu Qiang was about to take it off just then Lu Lijun spoke, “Not now elder brother as its size won't fit me.”

“Then?” Lu Qiang asked.

“I will wear it when I would be taller like you.”

“Hmm! That's a good idea. Then I will keep it safe until you become like me.”

Jiang Yuyan was happy that both liked what she bought for them and said, “Lu Lijun will look more handsome than you in this coat.”

Lu Qiang agreed and said, “Not a doubt as he is the most handsome man in this family.”

“Both of you, are you trying to flatter me? No need because I already know I am handsome,” Lu Lijun said confidently

without blinking an eye and looked like he was not joking.

Jiang Yuyan and Lu Qiang both smiled to hear it and didn't say anything but both meant what they said- Lu Lijun was going to be the most handsome man in the family.

Lu Qiang took off the winter coat and stepped towards the wardrobe. The wardrobe had one section that was empty and it had a glass door. One could see what was inside.

There was only one jacket hanging that he took out and hung the winter coat in it. Turning around to look at Lu Lijun, he said, "This coat will be here always. Even if I will wear it, it will be here only. The day when you will feel like you can wear it, just go ahead and do it.

Lu Lijun nodded and said, "I will."

That night, Lu Qiang asked Jiang Yuyan to sleep in his room as they never slept in his room before. It was always Jiang Yuyan's room, they shared.

Looking at the huge king size bed, Jiang Yuyan said, "It will be the first time that I am going to sleep here."

"I found your room better as I can feel your presence in everything there and don't worry, in the next few months you will be sleeping in this bed, always," Lu Qiang replied that made her blush.

Lying in a bed, while Jiang Yuyan lying beside him with her head resting on his arm, Lu Qiang said, "Lu Lijun likes you now."

"I think so too." Jiang Yuyan agreed.

"More than that, he respects you and cares for you."

"Is it?"

"Hmm!"

"Well, I am glad to know it."

"He would have rejected that sweatshirt you bought if the person was someone else instead of you but he accepted it and he will like it too."



“Are you sure that he will wear it? Jiang Yuyan asked.

“Yes!” Lu Qiang replied and after some talking and teasing both fell asleep.

The Next Morning In Jiang residence.

Jiang Yang was ready to go out of the home early even though it was not a time to go to the hospital yet. He sat in his car and looked like he was thinking about something but there was a smile on his face.

Soon the car stopped in front of Xi residence. Jiang Yang got out of the car and entered inside. Song Meilin was waiting for him as Jiang Yang already informed her that he was coming to meet her.

“Welcome doctor Jiang Yang,” she said.

Nodding with a smile, Jiang Yang went with her to the sofa in the living room and sat there. Jiang Yang’s eyes looked around in the living room and noticing it, song Meilin said, “Nicky is in her room as she is getting ready.”

Jiang Yang gave a little nod. When Jiang Yang informed Song Meilin he asked her that all the family members should be there so song Meilin invited him for breakfast as it was the time when all are mostly available. Song Meilin didn’t consider other members as a family but Jiang Yang insisted her to have everyone there. Soon it was breakfast time and all came to the living room, Xi Cheng and his mother, Nixxie’s father and Nixxie herself too.

Seeing Jiang Yang there early in the morning, she felt worried and asked, “Mom are you fine? Is there any problem that doctor Jiang Yang is here?”

Everyone looked at Song Meilin when Nixxie asked her this.

“There is nothing wrong with your mother’s health. I am here for something related to me,” Jiang Yang replied instead of Song Meilin.

---

\*\*For the readers, who wants to read the present situation between Jiang Yuyan and adult Lu Lijun. A glimpse...

Jiang Yuyan opened her eyes as she woke up but her vision was blurry as she had a high fever the previous night. Realizing someone was standing near the wardrobe in her room, she looked in the direction while rubbing her eyes to see clearly. Her head was still spinning.

She looked at the man who was standing facing his back towards her, wearing a winter coat bought by her for Lu Qiang in the past. A wide smile painted on her lips and getting out of the bed in a hurry, she back hugged the man saying, “Lu Qiang. Where were you?”

A man gulped to get a back hug from her and couldn't move. When she released her strong grip around him, the man turned to make the smile on her lips to disappear in the next moment and she exclaimed, “L-Lu Lijun?”

=====

Note

Get all the latest chapters of the novel on “w e b n o v e l . c o m”

To interact personally with the author “mynovel20” -

1) get to the comment section of the novel on “w e b n o v e l . c o m”

OR

2) Join the discord server with link given below-

<https://discord.gg/8QvQn3Y>

# 385 Game And The Bet...

Note - Chapter has been updated..

When both teams finished discussing and before the game started, the opposite team members didn't forget to mock each other.

"If we win, what will we get?" Jiang Yang asked the red team.

"Huh! As if you are really going to win," Lu Feng said with a smirk on his lips.

"Don't forget we have a star player in our team," Jiang Yang said while pointing towards Lu Qiang who was standing beside him.

Everyone was aware of Lu Qiang being the best player in soccer when he used to play in the past. It was his dream to be a soccer player but he had to give it up for his family. After a long time, they were going to see him playing soccer so everyone was already excited.

"Even if you have a star player, we have something that can control him," Lu Feng said and everyone understood what he meant.

Lu Qiang was looking at Jiang Yuyan who gave him a look saying, we are rivals now but Lu Qiang just smiled and winked that made her eyes open wide.

"Ohh! Really? Let's see then. If our team wins this match then I will take my darling on a date." Jiang Yang said.

Lu Feng frowned to hear it, "Date? I won't come and moreover, you won't win."

"So you admit that you are my darling as I didn't point out towards anyone when I said darling," Jiang Yang said with a mischievous smile on his face.

"What the F...." Lu Feng stopped as others were there.

“Not just both of you, I will ask Yuyan something too.” Lu Qiang spoke.

“Whether you win or lose, it’s good for you lovebirds but not for me as I can’t stand this A.s.s....” Lu Feng stopped again realizing he was going to curse again.

“Too much cursing huh? Why don’t you take it as the loser has to obey the winner? Or are you scared that as you know we are going to win?” Jiang Yang asked.

“Scared? Huh? My A.s.s....” Lu Feng stopped again. He never cursed this much but Jiang Yang was the one who always made to curse.

“The loser will be a slave for the winner for a week. What do you say?” Jiang Yang asked.

Fine then.” Lu Feng agreed as he looked like he had something in his mind.

Jiang Yang smiled to see Lu Feng agreeing and whispered to Lu Qiang, “Sometimes it’s really easy to get him with his ego.”

“Don’t test his ego too much or you might have to pay for it,” Lu Qiang whispered.

“Wait-Wait! We are here too. If we win, Lu Lijun has to listen to his both sisters.” Both Lu sisters were happy with the thought that they were going to win as Lu Qiang was with them and it was the best opportunity to get the advantage of it against the little iceberg.

“Okay! And if we win, both of you have to listen to me.” Lu Lijun agreed.

Lu Feng called Jiang Yuyan to take her to another side and said, “Their team is stronger as Lu Qiang and Jiang Yang both are good in soccer, especially Lu Qiang so we have to use our Master weapon to deal with him.”

Jiang Yuyan looked at him with a puzzled expression and asked, “Weapon?”

“Yes and that’s you. We can’t lose this match so you have to do this for our team’s sake. Use whatever means you can. You

are the only one who can stop him because Lu Lijun is not going to do anything mischievous against his brother.”

“I will try my best but I don’t think he will fall for anything,” Jiang Yuyan said.

“That rock heart has already fallen for you, isn’t it enough?” Lu Feng said.

Hearing it Jiang Yuyan smiled and nodded her head as assuring she will try her best.

Jiang Yang went to Lu Qiang and said while looking at Lu Feng and Jiang Yuyan who were talking, ” Seems like, he is trying to use my sister against you.”

“Let them be. She is always welcome even if we have to lose the game,” Lu Qiang said while smiling.

“No way. We can’t lose. I want to annoy him to death and this is the only chance when I can ask him to do whatever I want.”

Hearing it, Lu Qiang smiled teasingly so Jiang Yang asked, “Why are you smiling like this.”

“I was just thinking if their team wins then what Lu Feng will do with you?” Lu Qiang replied.

“It won’t happen as long as you are with me. Saying it both went their places as the game was about to start.

Everyone took their positions and the referee blew the whistle. The ball was in a court and Lu Qiang was able to get it. Lu Feng was about to get him but Jiang Yang came in his way and said, “Darling, don’t you dare go behind another man. You are mine.”

“My ass!” saying it Lu Feng tried to go behind Lu Qiang but Jiang Yang didn’t leave him.

The lawn was not as huge as a football court. It was a small place in which few people could play comfortably and with the skills of Lu Qiang, in just a few moments he was able to do the goal.

The moment he ran with a ball towards the net, Jiang Yuyan came in front of him. Lu Qiang stopped with the ball held

under his one foot, face full of confidence, looking at Jiang Yuyan with a mischievous smile, “So what should I ask you to do after we win the game?”

“First, Let’s see who is going to win.” Jiang Yuyan replied. Lu Lijun and Jiang Peizhi were there too, to stop him from doing the goal.

“Really?” saying it, Lu Qiang kicked the ball that fell into the net passing by inch closer distance from Jiang Yayan and the goalkeeper couldn’t even realize where the ball went. It was a goal and the blue team was celebrating while smiling mockingly at the red team.

## 386 Wicked Planning...

Note- read authors thought first..

Lu Qiang looked at Jiang Yuyan and asked her to sit. Sitting in one of the chairs, Jiang Yuyan passed the shopping bag in her hands to Lu Qiang. Lu Qiang had a smile on his face as his woman bought something for him.

“Brother wear it and show us,” Lu Lijun said.

Lu Qiang got up from the couch and wore the black winter coat while standing in front of the mirror. He turned to look at both of them. Jiang Yuyan looked at him with her eyes wide open to see how handsome he was looking in that coat.

He always looked handsome but her reaction was like this because he was wearing something bought by her and she couldn't help but admire him.

“How is it, Lu Lijun?” Lu Qiang asked.

“It's the really nice elder brother, I want to wear it too,” Said Lu Lijun.

“Okay! Come here,” saying it, Lu Qiang was about to take it off just then Lu Lijun spoke, “Not now elder brother as its size won't fit me.”

“Then?” Lu Qiang asked.

“I will wear it when I would be taller like you.”

“Hmm! That's a good idea. Then I will keep it safe until you become like me.”

Jiang Yuyan was happy that both liked what she bought for them and said, “Lu Lijun will look more handsome than you in this coat.”

Lu Qiang agreed and said, “Not a doubt as he is the most handsome man in this family.”

“Both of you, are you trying to flatter me? No need because I already know I am handsome,” Lu Lijun said confidently

without blinking an eye and looked like he was not joking.

Jiang Yuyan and Lu Qiang both smiled to hear it and didn't say anything but both meant what they said- Lu Lijun was going to be the most handsome man in the family.

Lu Qiang took off the winter coat and stepped towards the wardrobe. The wardrobe had one section that was empty and it had a glass door. One could see what was inside.

There was only one jacket hanging that he took out and hung the winter coat in it. Turning around to look at Lu Lijun, he said, "This coat will be here always. Even if I will wear it, it will be here only. The day when you will feel like you can wear it, just go ahead and do it.

Lu Lijun nodded and said, "I will."

That night, Lu Qiang asked Jiang Yuyan to sleep in his room as they never slept in his room before. It was always Jiang Yuyan's room, they shared.

Looking at the huge king size bed, Jiang Yuyan said, "It will be the first time that I am going to sleep here."

"I found your room better as I can feel your presence in everything there and don't worry, in the next few months you will be sleeping in this bed, always," Lu Qiang replied that made her blush.

Lying in a bed, while Jiang Yuyan lying beside him with her head resting on his arm, Lu Qiang said, "Lu Lijun likes you now."

"I think so too." Jiang Yuyan agreed.

"More than that, he respects you and cares for you."

"Is it?"

"Hmm!"

"Well, I am glad to know it."

"He would have rejected that sweatshirt you bought if the person was someone else instead of you but he accepted it and he will like it too."



“Are you sure that he will wear it? Jiang Yuyan asked.

“Yes!” Lu Qiang replied and after some talking and teasing both fell asleep.

The Next Morning In Jiang residence.

Jiang Yang was ready to go out of the home early even though it was not a time to go to the hospital yet. He sat in his car and looked like he was thinking about something but there was a smile on his face.

Soon the car stopped in front of Xi residence. Jiang Yang got out of the car and entered inside. Song Meilin was waiting for him as Jiang Yang already informed her that he was coming to meet her.

“Welcome doctor Jiang Yang,” she said.

Nodding with a smile, Jiang Yang went with her to the sofa in the living room and sat there. Jiang Yang’s eyes looked around in the living room and noticing it, song Meilin said, “Nicky is in her room as she is getting ready.”

Jiang Yang gave a little nod. When Jiang Yang informed Song Meilin he asked her that all the family members should be there so song Meilin invited him for breakfast as it was the time when all are mostly available. Song Meilin didn’t consider other members as a family but Jiang Yang insisted her to have everyone there. Soon it was breakfast time and all came to the living room, Xi Cheng and his mother, Nixxie’s father and Nixxie herself too.

Seeing Jiang Yang there early in the morning, she felt worried and asked, “Mom are you fine? Is there any problem that doctor Jiang Yang is here?”

Everyone looked at Song Meilin when Nixxie asked her this.

“There is nothing wrong with your mother’s health. I am here for something related to me,” Jiang Yang replied instead of Song Meilin.

---

\*\*For the readers, who wants to read the present situation between Jiang Yuyan and adult Lu Lijun. A glimpse...

Jiang Yuyan opened her eyes as she woke up but her vision was blurry as she had a high fever the previous night. Realizing someone was standing near the wardrobe in her room, she looked in the direction while rubbing her eyes to see clearly. Her head was still spinning.

She looked at the man who was standing facing his back towards her, wearing a winter coat bought by her for Lu Qiang in the past. A wide smile painted on her lips and getting out of the bed in a hurry, she back hugged the man saying, “Lu Qiang. Where were you?”

A man gulped to get a back hug from her and couldn't move. When she released her strong grip around him, the man turned to make the smile on her lips to disappear in the next moment and she exclaimed, “L-Lu Lijun?”

=====

Note

Get all the latest chapters of the novel on “w e b n o v e l . c o m”

To interact personally with the author “mynovel20” -

1) get to the comment section of the novel on “w e b n o v e l . c o m”

OR

2) Join the discord server with link given below-

<https://discord.gg/8QvQn3Y>

# 387 I am your slave since the day you entered my heart..

Note- Read authors thought first..

Lu Qiang looked at Jiang Yuyan and asked her to sit. Sitting in one of the chairs, Jiang Yuyan passed the shopping bag in her hands to Lu Qiang. Lu Qiang had a smile on his face as his woman bought something for him.

“Brother wear it and show us,” Lu Lijun said.

Lu Qiang got up from the couch and wore the black winter coat while standing in front of the mirror. He turned to look at both of them. Jiang Yuyan looked at him with her eyes wide open to see how handsome he was looking in that coat.

He always looked handsome but her reaction was like this because he was wearing something bought by her and she couldn't help but admire him.

“How is it, Lu Lijun?” Lu Qiang asked.

“It's the really nice elder brother, I want to wear it too,” Said Lu Lijun.

“Okay! Come here,” saying it, Lu Qiang was about to take it off just then Lu Lijun spoke, “Not now elder brother as its size won't fit me.”

“Then?” Lu Qiang asked.

“I will wear it when I would be taller like you.”

“Hmm! That's a good idea. Then I will keep it safe until you become like me.”

Jiang Yuyan was happy that both liked what she bought for them and said, “Lu Lijun will look more handsome than you in this coat.”

Lu Qiang agreed and said, “Not a doubt as he is the most handsome man in this family.”

“Both of you, are you trying to flatter me? No need because I already know I am handsome,” Lu Lijun said confidently without blinking an eye and looked like he was not joking.

Jiang Yuyan and Lu Qiang both smiled to hear it and didn't say anything but both meant what they said- Lu Lijun was going to be the most handsome man in the family.

Lu Qiang took off the winter coat and stepped towards the wardrobe. The wardrobe had one section that was empty and it had a glass door. One could see what was inside.

There was only one jacket hanging that he took out and hung the winter coat in it. Turning around to look at Lu Lijun, he said, “This coat will be here always. Even if I will wear it, it will be here only. The day when you will feel like you can wear it, just go ahead and do it.

Lu Lijun nodded and said, “I will.”

That night, Lu Qiang asked Jiang Yuyan to sleep in his room as they never slept in his room before. It was always Jiang Yuyan's room, they shared.

Looking at the huge king size bed, Jiang Yuyan said, “It will be the first time that I am going to sleep here.”

“I found your room better as I can feel your presence in everything there and don't worry, in the next few months you will be sleeping in this bed, always,” Lu Qiang replied that made her blush.

Lying in a bed, while Jiang Yuyan lying beside him with her head resting on his arm, Lu Qiang said, “Lu Lijun likes you now.”

“I think so too.” Jiang Yuyan agreed.

“More than that, he respects you and cares for you.”

“Is it?”

“Hmm!”

“Well, I am glad to know it.”

“He would have rejected that sweatshirt you bought if the person was someone else instead of you but he accepted it and

he will like it too.”

“Are you sure that he will wear it? Jiang Yuyan asked.

“Yes!” Lu Qiang replied and after some talking and teasing both fell asleep.

The Next Morning In Jiang residence.

Jiang Yang was ready to go out of the home early even though it was not a time to go to the hospital yet. He sat in his car and looked like he was thinking about something but there was a smile on his face.

Soon the car stopped in front of Xi residence. Jiang Yang got out of the car and entered inside. Song Meilin was waiting for him as Jiang Yang already informed her that he was coming to meet her.

“Welcome doctor Jiang Yang,” she said.

Nodding with a smile, Jiang Yang went with her to the sofa in the living room and sat there. Jiang Yang’s eyes looked around in the living room and noticing it, song Meilin said, “Nicky is in her room as she is getting ready.”

Jiang Yang gave a little nod. When Jiang Yang informed Song Meilin he asked her that all the family members should be there so song Meilin invited him for breakfast as it was the time when all are mostly available. Song Meilin didn’t consider other members as a family but Jiang Yang insisted her to have everyone there. Soon it was breakfast time and all came to the living room, Xi Cheng and his mother, Nixxxie’s father and Nixxxie herself too.

Seeing Jiang Yang there early in the morning, she felt worried and asked, “Mom are you fine? Is there any problem that doctor Jiang Yang is here?”

Everyone looked at Song Meilin when Nixxxie asked her this.

“There is nothing wrong with your mother’s health. I am here for something related to me,” Jiang Yang replied instead of Song Meilin.

---

\*\*For the readers, who wants to read the present situation between Jiang Yuyan and adult Lu Lijun. A glimpse...

Jiang Yuyan opened her eyes as she woke up but her vision was blurry as she had a high fever the previous night. Realizing someone was standing near the wardrobe in her room, she looked in the direction while rubbing her eyes to see clearly. Her head was still spinning.

She looked at the man who was standing facing his back towards her, wearing a winter coat bought by her for Lu Qiang in the past. A wide smile painted on her lips and getting out of the bed in a hurry, she back hugged the man saying, "Lu Qiang. Where were you?"

A man gulped to get a back hug from her and couldn't move. When she released her strong grip around him, the man turned to make the smile on her lips to disappear in the next moment and she exclaimed, "L-Lu Lijun?"

=====

Note

Get all the latest chapters of the novel on "w e b n o v e l . c o m"

To interact personally with the author "mynovel20" -

1) get to the comment section of the novel on "w e b n o v e l . c o m"

OR

2) Join the discord server with link given below-

<https://discord.gg/8QvQn3Y>

## 388 Unexpected Result...

Note- read authors thought first..

Lu Qiang looked at Jiang Yuyan and asked her to sit. Sitting in one of the chairs, Jiang Yuyan passed the shopping bag in her hands to Lu Qiang. Lu Qiang had a smile on his face as his woman bought something for him.

“Brother wear it and show us,” Lu Lijun said.

Lu Qiang got up from the couch and wore the black winter coat while standing in front of the mirror. He turned to look at both of them. Jiang Yuyan looked at him with her eyes wide open to see how handsome he was looking in that coat.

He always looked handsome but her reaction was like this because he was wearing something bought by her and she couldn't help but admire him.

“How is it, Lu Lijun?” Lu Qiang asked.

“It's the really nice elder brother, I want to wear it too,” Said Lu Lijun.

“Okay! Come here,” saying it, Lu Qiang was about to take it off just then Lu Lijun spoke, “Not now elder brother as its size won't fit me.”

“Then?” Lu Qiang asked.

“I will wear it when I would be taller like you.”

“Hmm! That's a good idea. Then I will keep it safe until you become like me.”

Jiang Yuyan was happy that both liked what she bought for them and said, “Lu Lijun will look more handsome than you in this coat.”

Lu Qiang agreed and said, “Not a doubt as he is the most handsome man in this family.”

“Both of you, are you trying to flatter me? No need because I already know I am handsome,” Lu Lijun said confidently

without blinking an eye and looked like he was not joking.

Jiang Yuyan and Lu Qiang both smiled to hear it and didn't say anything but both meant what they said- Lu Lijun was going to be the most handsome man in the family.

Lu Qiang took off the winter coat and stepped towards the wardrobe. The wardrobe had one section that was empty and it had a glass door. One could see what was inside.

There was only one jacket hanging that he took out and hung the winter coat in it. Turning around to look at Lu Lijun, he said, "This coat will be here always. Even if I will wear it, it will be here only. The day when you will feel like you can wear it, just go ahead and do it.

Lu Lijun nodded and said, "I will."

That night, Lu Qiang asked Jiang Yuyan to sleep in his room as they never slept in his room before. It was always Jiang Yuyan's room, they shared.

Looking at the huge king size bed, Jiang Yuyan said, "It will be the first time that I am going to sleep here."

"I found your room better as I can feel your presence in everything there and don't worry, in the next few months you will be sleeping in this bed, always," Lu Qiang replied that made her blush.

Lying in a bed, while Jiang Yuyan lying beside him with her head resting on his arm, Lu Qiang said, "Lu Lijun likes you now."

"I think so too." Jiang Yuyan agreed.

"More than that, he respects you and cares for you."

"Is it?"

"Hmm!"

"Well, I am glad to know it."

"He would have rejected that sweatshirt you bought if the person was someone else instead of you but he accepted it and he will like it too."



“Are you sure that he will wear it? Jiang Yuyan asked.

“Yes!” Lu Qiang replied and after some talking and teasing both fell asleep.

The Next Morning In Jiang residence.

Jiang Yang was ready to go out of the home early even though it was not a time to go to the hospital yet. He sat in his car and looked like he was thinking about something but there was a smile on his face.

Soon the car stopped in front of Xi residence. Jiang Yang got out of the car and entered inside. Song Meilin was waiting for him as Jiang Yang already informed her that he was coming to meet her.

“Welcome doctor Jiang Yang,” she said.

Nodding with a smile, Jiang Yang went with her to the sofa in the living room and sat there. Jiang Yang’s eyes looked around in the living room and noticing it, song Meilin said, “Nicky is in her room as she is getting ready.”

Jiang Yang gave a little nod. When Jiang Yang informed Song Meilin he asked her that all the family members should be there so song Meilin invited him for breakfast as it was the time when all are mostly available. Song Meilin didn’t consider other members as a family but Jiang Yang insisted her to have everyone there. Soon it was breakfast time and all came to the living room, Xi Cheng and his mother, Nixxie’s father and Nixxie herself too.

Seeing Jiang Yang there early in the morning, she felt worried and asked, “Mom are you fine? Is there any problem that doctor Jiang Yang is here?”

Everyone looked at Song Meilin when Nixxie asked her this.

“There is nothing wrong with your mother’s health. I am here for something related to me,” Jiang Yang replied instead of Song Meilin.

---

\*\*For the readers, who wants to read the present situation between Jiang Yuyan and adult Lu Lijun. A glimpse...

Jiang Yuyan opened her eyes as she woke up but her vision was blurry as she had a high fever the previous night. Realizing someone was standing near the wardrobe in her room, she looked in the direction while rubbing her eyes to see clearly. Her head was still spinning.

She looked at the man who was standing facing his back towards her, wearing a winter coat bought by her for Lu Qiang in the past. A wide smile painted on her lips and getting out of the bed in a hurry, she back hugged the man saying, “Lu Qiang. Where were you?”

A man gulped to get a back hug from her and couldn't move. When she released her strong grip around him, the man turned to make the smile on her lips to disappear in the next moment and she exclaimed, “L-Lu Lijun?”

=====

Note

Get all the latest chapters of the novel on “w e b n o v e l . c o m”

To interact personally with the author “mynovel20” -

1) get to the comment section of the novel on “w e b n o v e l . c o m”

OR

2) Join the discord server with link given below-

<https://discord.gg/8QvQn3Y>

## 389 Virgin Guy Being Shy...

When all were happy about the game and it's the result, Lu Bao and Lu Lian looked like someone just scolded them. Their plan to have Lu Lijun as a slave was ruined and they were thinking what this little iceberg was going to do with them. Now both were regretting about teasing him while playing knowing his temperament.

Everyone was going inside the home and when Lu Qiang was with Jiang Yuyan, he whispered in Jiang Yuyan's ears, "Miss, what do you want this slave to do for you?"

Jiang Yuyan smiled and whispered back, "What this slave is good at."

Lu Qiang replied in a low voice, "I am good at pleasing in a bed."

"Cough! Such a pervert slave I have." Saying it he she ran in a hurry toward her room and Lu Qiang followed her.

When Lu Bao and Lu Lian went to their room, both were tensed. "What should we do now? Lu Lijun is going to make us suffer as we were teasing him before," Lu Bao said.

"It's okay. He will just ask us to run some errands for him and it's only for a week so endure it till then," Lu Lian said.

"I know it's only for a week but I know he is going to make us suffer so if it is like that I will like to have some fun with him."

"What do you mean?" Lu Lian asked.

"Nothing. Just some fun with a little brother," Lu Bao replied with a mischievous smile on her face.

Lu Qiang and Jiang Yuyan went to their rooms. As Jiang Yuyan was about to get her clothes which Lu Qiang already arranged in a wardrobe from her bag, Lu Qiang stopped her. "Wait!"

"What happened?" she asked.

“Let your slave do the job, Milady,” saying it, he stepped towards the wardrobe and pulled out clothes for her. Taking her clothes he stepped towards the bathroom but Jiang Yuyan stood at her place. Turning around to look at her he asked, “Aren’t you coming for a bath?”

“I am but why are you going inside?” she asked.

“As your slave, it’s my job to look after everything you need. Let me help you have a bath,” Lu Qiang said with a mischievous smile on his face and he looked like he was enjoying being her slave.

“You don’t need to do it. I didn’t ask you to be my slave.”

“But I want it. If you won’t come to have a bath, this slave is stubborn towards his duties and he will carry you to the bathroom in his arms,” Lu Qiang said.

“Wasn’t it enough to share the same room here that you want to do more?” she asked. She never expected Lu Qiang to have the same room for both of them but who could stop him.

“With you, nothing is enough for me.” Saying it, Lu Qiang moved towards her as he was ready to carry her so she exclaimed, “Stop-stop! I can come by myself.”

“That’s like a good girl. It’s not like we are having a bath together for the first time.”

Jiang Yang and Lu Feng went to their room. Seeing Jiang Yang in a room, Lu Feng asked with a face showing annoyance written on it, “There are so many rooms here. Why do you want to share my room?”

“I will go where my darling will go,” Jiang Yang replied getting closer to him.

“Fuck off!” Pushing him back, Lu Feng stepped towards the bathroom and Jiang Yang followed him.

“Why are you following me?” Lu Feng asked.

“To have a bath with you.” Jiang Yang replied.

“With me? Are we kids now, Jiang Yang?”

“We are not kids, that’s why I want to have a bath with you,” Jiang Yang said and winked at him.

Lu Feng gave out a deep sigh and said, “You are really.....I have no words for you.”

“Why? Are you scared that you might be shocked to see that mine is better than you,” Jiang Yang said pointing towards Lu Feng at his lower waist region?

“hah! Mine is better and I don’t have to show it to you,” Lu Feng said.

“I can understand a virgin guy being shy.”

“How do you know that I am a virgin?” Lu Feng asked.

“Isn’t it obvious. You and Lu Qiang both are virgins as both of you loved only one woman till now. Still, a virgin, what a shame. Both of you don’t look like grandchildren of grandpa Lu.”

Lu Feng had nothing to say and ordered him in an angry tone, “Stop this nonsense and go have a bath. Also, Make sure to remove all the dirt in your brain.”

“Aww! My darling is upset as I called him a virgin. If you want, I can make you lose your virginity. What say?” saying it, Jiang Yang winked at him.

“What the...” Lu Feng strode towards him and pulled him by his hand.

“Be gentle darling, I am delicate,” Jiang Yang was still smiling seeing Lu Feng angry.

Lu Feng pushed him out of his room. Before Jiang Yang could push the door open, Lu Feng closed it fast. Making sure to lock the door, Lu Feng went to the bathroom to have a shower.

Jiang Yang was standing outside of the door, having a pleasant smile on his face as he was able to annoy Lu Feng and said, “Today’s quota of annoying him is done. Jiang Yang stood up outside of the room for some time and waited for Lu Feng to open the door for him. A half an hour passed by but Lu Feng didn’t open the door even after knocking.

Jiang Yang felt like he needs to pee and banged the door, “Lu Feng open the door. I need to use the bathroom.” There was no reply.

Jiang Yang felt it was an emergency situation and knocked on Lu Qiang’s room door. There was no reply from inside. As it was an emergency, Jiang Yang opened the door and entered inside. Just then Lu Qiang and Jiang Yuyan came out of the bathroom and both were wrapped in just a towel. Seeing him Jiang Yuyan exclaimed, “Brother!”

## 390 Missing Lu Lijun...

Note- read authors thought first..

Lu Qiang looked at Jiang Yuyan and asked her to sit. Sitting in one of the chairs, Jiang Yuyan passed the shopping bag in her hands to Lu Qiang. Lu Qiang had a smile on his face as his woman bought something for him.

“Brother wear it and show us,” Lu Lijun said.

Lu Qiang got up from the couch and wore the black winter coat while standing in front of the mirror. He turned to look at both of them. Jiang Yuyan looked at him with her eyes wide open to see how handsome he was looking in that coat.

He always looked handsome but her reaction was like this because he was wearing something bought by her and she couldn't help but admire him.

“How is it, Lu Lijun?” Lu Qiang asked.

“It's the really nice elder brother, I want to wear it too,” Said Lu Lijun.

“Okay! Come here,” saying it, Lu Qiang was about to take it off just then Lu Lijun spoke, “Not now elder brother as its size won't fit me.”

“Then?” Lu Qiang asked.

“I will wear it when I would be taller like you.”

“Hmm! That's a good idea. Then I will keep it safe until you become like me.”

Jiang Yuyan was happy that both liked what she bought for them and said, “Lu Lijun will look more handsome than you in this coat.”

Lu Qiang agreed and said, “Not a doubt as he is the most handsome man in this family.”

“Both of you, are you trying to flatter me? No need because I already know I am handsome,” Lu Lijun said confidently

without blinking an eye and looked like he was not joking.

Jiang Yuyan and Lu Qiang both smiled to hear it and didn't say anything but both meant what they said- Lu Lijun was going to be the most handsome man in the family.

Lu Qiang took off the winter coat and stepped towards the wardrobe. The wardrobe had one section that was empty and it had a glass door. One could see what was inside.

There was only one jacket hanging that he took out and hung the winter coat in it. Turning around to look at Lu Lijun, he said, "This coat will be here always. Even if I will wear it, it will be here only. The day when you will feel like you can wear it, just go ahead and do it.

Lu Lijun nodded and said, "I will."

That night, Lu Qiang asked Jiang Yuyan to sleep in his room as they never slept in his room before. It was always Jiang Yuyan's room, they shared.

Looking at the huge king size bed, Jiang Yuyan said, "It will be the first time that I am going to sleep here."

"I found your room better as I can feel your presence in everything there and don't worry, in the next few months you will be sleeping in this bed, always," Lu Qiang replied that made her blush.

Lying in a bed, while Jiang Yuyan lying beside him with her head resting on his arm, Lu Qiang said, "Lu Lijun likes you now."

"I think so too." Jiang Yuyan agreed.

"More than that, he respects you and cares for you."

"Is it?"

"Hmm!"

"Well, I am glad to know it."

"He would have rejected that sweatshirt you bought if the person was someone else instead of you but he accepted it and he will like it too."



“Are you sure that he will wear it? Jiang Yuyan asked.

“Yes!” Lu Qiang replied and after some talking and teasing both fell asleep.

The Next Morning In Jiang residence.

Jiang Yang was ready to go out of the home early even though it was not a time to go to the hospital yet. He sat in his car and looked like he was thinking about something but there was a smile on his face.

Soon the car stopped in front of Xi residence. Jiang Yang got out of the car and entered inside. Song Meilin was waiting for him as Jiang Yang already informed her that he was coming to meet her.

“Welcome doctor Jiang Yang,” she said.

Nodding with a smile, Jiang Yang went with her to the sofa in the living room and sat there. Jiang Yang’s eyes looked around in the living room and noticing it, song Meilin said, “Nicky is in her room as she is getting ready.”

Jiang Yang gave a little nod. When Jiang Yang informed Song Meilin he asked her that all the family members should be there so song Meilin invited him for breakfast as it was the time when all are mostly available. Song Meilin didn’t consider other members as a family but Jiang Yang insisted her to have everyone there. Soon it was breakfast time and all came to the living room, Xi Cheng and his mother, Nixxie’s father and Nixxie herself too.

Seeing Jiang Yang there early in the morning, she felt worried and asked, “Mom are you fine? Is there any problem that doctor Jiang Yang is here?”

Everyone looked at Song Meilin when Nixxie asked her this.

“There is nothing wrong with your mother’s health. I am here for something related to me,” Jiang Yang replied instead of Song Meilin.

---

\*\*For the readers, who wants to read the present situation between Jiang Yuyan and adult Lu Lijun. A glimpse...

Jiang Yuyan opened her eyes as she woke up but her vision was blurry as she had a high fever the previous night. Realizing someone was standing near the wardrobe in her room, she looked in the direction while rubbing her eyes to see clearly. Her head was still spinning.

She looked at the man who was standing facing his back towards her, wearing a winter coat bought by her for Lu Qiang in the past. A wide smile painted on her lips and getting out of the bed in a hurry, she back hugged the man saying, “Lu Qiang. Where were you?”

A man gulped to get a back hug from her and couldn't move. When she released her strong grip around him, the man turned to make the smile on her lips to disappear in the next moment and she exclaimed, “L-Lu Lijun?”

=====

Note

Get all the latest chapters of the novel on “w e b n o v e l . c o m”

To interact personally with the author “mynovel20” -

1) get to the comment section of the novel on “w e b n o v e l . c o m”

OR

2) Join the discord server with link given below-

<https://discord.gg/8QvQn3Y>

# 392 Both Are Equal For Me...

Note- read authors thought first..

Lu Qiang looked at Jiang Yuyan and asked her to sit. Sitting in one of the chairs, Jiang Yuyan passed the shopping bag in her hands to Lu Qiang. Lu Qiang had a smile on his face as his woman bought something for him.

“Brother wear it and show us,” Lu Lijun said.

Lu Qiang got up from the couch and wore the black winter coat while standing in front of the mirror. He turned to look at both of them. Jiang Yuyan looked at him with her eyes wide open to see how handsome he was looking in that coat.

He always looked handsome but her reaction was like this because he was wearing something bought by her and she couldn't help but admire him.

“How is it, Lu Lijun?” Lu Qiang asked.

“It's the really nice elder brother, I want to wear it too,” Said Lu Lijun.

“Okay! Come here,” saying it, Lu Qiang was about to take it off just then Lu Lijun spoke, “Not now elder brother as its size won't fit me.”

“Then?” Lu Qiang asked.

“I will wear it when I would be taller like you.”

“Hmm! That's a good idea. Then I will keep it safe until you become like me.”

Jiang Yuyan was happy that both liked what she bought for them and said, “Lu Lijun will look more handsome than you in this coat.”

Lu Qiang agreed and said, “Not a doubt as he is the most handsome man in this family.”

“Both of you, are you trying to flatter me? No need because I already know I am handsome,” Lu Lijun said confidently without blinking an eye and looked like he was not joking.

Jiang Yuyan and Lu Qiang both smiled to hear it and didn't say anything but both meant what they said- Lu Lijun was going to be the most handsome man in the family.

Lu Qiang took off the winter coat and stepped towards the wardrobe. The wardrobe had one section that was empty and it had a glass door. One could see what was inside.

There was only one jacket hanging that he took out and hung the winter coat in it. Turning around to look at Lu Lijun, he said, “This coat will be here always. Even if I will wear it, it will be here only. The day when you will feel like you can wear it, just go ahead and do it.

Lu Lijun nodded and said, “I will.”

That night, Lu Qiang asked Jiang Yuyan to sleep in his room as they never slept in his room before. It was always Jiang Yuyan's room, they shared.

Looking at the huge king size bed, Jiang Yuyan said, “It will be the first time that I am going to sleep here.”

“I found your room better as I can feel your presence in everything there and don't worry, in the next few months you will be sleeping in this bed, always,” Lu Qiang replied that made her blush.

Lying in a bed, while Jiang Yuyan lying beside him with her head resting on his arm, Lu Qiang said, “Lu Lijun likes you now.”

“I think so too.” Jiang Yuyan agreed.

“More than that, he respects you and cares for you.”

“Is it?”

“Hmm!”

“Well, I am glad to know it.”

“He would have rejected that sweatshirt you bought if the person was someone else instead of you but he accepted it and

he will like it too.”

“Are you sure that he will wear it? Jiang Yuyan asked.

“Yes!” Lu Qiang replied and after some talking and teasing both fell asleep.

The Next Morning In Jiang residence.

Jiang Yang was ready to go out of the home early even though it was not a time to go to the hospital yet. He sat in his car and looked like he was thinking about something but there was a smile on his face.

Soon the car stopped in front of Xi residence. Jiang Yang got out of the car and entered inside. Song Meilin was waiting for him as Jiang Yang already informed her that he was coming to meet her.

“Welcome doctor Jiang Yang,” she said.

Nodding with a smile, Jiang Yang went with her to the sofa in the living room and sat there. Jiang Yang’s eyes looked around in the living room and noticing it, song Meilin said, “Nicky is in her room as she is getting ready.”

Jiang Yang gave a little nod. When Jiang Yang informed Song Meilin he asked her that all the family members should be there so song Meilin invited him for breakfast as it was the time when all are mostly available. Song Meilin didn’t consider other members as a family but Jiang Yang insisted her to have everyone there. Soon it was breakfast time and all came to the living room, Xi Cheng and his mother, Nixxxie’s father and Nixxxie herself too.

Seeing Jiang Yang there early in the morning, she felt worried and asked, “Mom are you fine? Is there any problem that doctor Jiang Yang is here?”

Everyone looked at Song Meilin when Nixxxie asked her this.

“There is nothing wrong with your mother’s health. I am here for something related to me,” Jiang Yang replied instead of Song Meilin.

---

\*\*For the readers, who wants to read the present situation between Jiang Yuyan and adult Lu Lijun. A glimpse...

Jiang Yuyan opened her eyes as she woke up but her vision was blurry as she had a high fever the previous night. Realizing someone was standing near the wardrobe in her room, she looked in the direction while rubbing her eyes to see clearly. Her head was still spinning.

She looked at the man who was standing facing his back towards her, wearing a winter coat bought by her for Lu Qiang in the past. A wide smile painted on her lips and getting out of the bed in a hurry, she back hugged the man saying, "Lu Qiang. Where were you?"

A man gulped to get a back hug from her and couldn't move. When she released her strong grip around him, the man turned to make the smile on her lips to disappear in the next moment and she exclaimed, "L-Lu Lijun?"

=====

Note

Get all the latest chapters of the novel on "w e b n o v e l . c o m"

To interact personally with the author "mynovel20" -

1) get to the comment section of the novel on "w e b n o v e l . c o m"

OR

2) Join the discord server with link given below-

<https://discord.gg/8QvQn3Y>

## 393 Afraid Of The Dark...

Note- read authors thought first..

Lu Qiang looked at Jiang Yuyan and asked her to sit. Sitting in one of the chairs, Jiang Yuyan passed the shopping bag in her hands to Lu Qiang. Lu Qiang had a smile on his face as his woman bought something for him.

“Brother wear it and show us,” Lu Lijun said.

Lu Qiang got up from the couch and wore the black winter coat while standing in front of the mirror. He turned to look at both of them. Jiang Yuyan looked at him with her eyes wide open to see how handsome he was looking in that coat.

He always looked handsome but her reaction was like this because he was wearing something bought by her and she couldn't help but admire him.

“How is it, Lu Lijun?” Lu Qiang asked.

“It's the really nice elder brother, I want to wear it too,” Said Lu Lijun.

“Okay! Come here,” saying it, Lu Qiang was about to take it off just then Lu Lijun spoke, “Not now elder brother as its size won't fit me.”

“Then?” Lu Qiang asked.

“I will wear it when I would be taller like you.”

“Hmm! That's a good idea. Then I will keep it safe until you become like me.”

Jiang Yuyan was happy that both liked what she bought for them and said, “Lu Lijun will look more handsome than you in this coat.”

Lu Qiang agreed and said, “Not a doubt as he is the most handsome man in this family.”

“Both of you, are you trying to flatter me? No need because I already know I am handsome,” Lu Lijun said confidently

without blinking an eye and looked like he was not joking.

Jiang Yuyan and Lu Qiang both smiled to hear it and didn't say anything but both meant what they said- Lu Lijun was going to be the most handsome man in the family.

Lu Qiang took off the winter coat and stepped towards the wardrobe. The wardrobe had one section that was empty and it had a glass door. One could see what was inside.

There was only one jacket hanging that he took out and hung the winter coat in it. Turning around to look at Lu Lijun, he said, "This coat will be here always. Even if I will wear it, it will be here only. The day when you will feel like you can wear it, just go ahead and do it.

Lu Lijun nodded and said, "I will."

That night, Lu Qiang asked Jiang Yuyan to sleep in his room as they never slept in his room before. It was always Jiang Yuyan's room, they shared.

Looking at the huge king size bed, Jiang Yuyan said, "It will be the first time that I am going to sleep here."

"I found your room better as I can feel your presence in everything there and don't worry, in the next few months you will be sleeping in this bed, always," Lu Qiang replied that made her blush.

Lying in a bed, while Jiang Yuyan lying beside him with her head resting on his arm, Lu Qiang said, "Lu Lijun likes you now."

"I think so too." Jiang Yuyan agreed.

"More than that, he respects you and cares for you."

"Is it?"

"Hmm!"

"Well, I am glad to know it."

"He would have rejected that sweatshirt you bought if the person was someone else instead of you but he accepted it and he will like it too."



“Are you sure that he will wear it? Jiang Yuyan asked.

“Yes!” Lu Qiang replied and after some talking and teasing both fell asleep.

The Next Morning In Jiang residence.

Jiang Yang was ready to go out of the home early even though it was not a time to go to the hospital yet. He sat in his car and looked like he was thinking about something but there was a smile on his face.

Soon the car stopped in front of Xi residence. Jiang Yang got out of the car and entered inside. Song Meilin was waiting for him as Jiang Yang already informed her that he was coming to meet her.

“Welcome doctor Jiang Yang,” she said.

Nodding with a smile, Jiang Yang went with her to the sofa in the living room and sat there. Jiang Yang’s eyes looked around in the living room and noticing it, song Meilin said, “Nicky is in her room as she is getting ready.”

Jiang Yang gave a little nod. When Jiang Yang informed Song Meilin he asked her that all the family members should be there so song Meilin invited him for breakfast as it was the time when all are mostly available. Song Meilin didn’t consider other members as a family but Jiang Yang insisted her to have everyone there. Soon it was breakfast time and all came to the living room, Xi Cheng and his mother, Nixxie’s father and Nixxie herself too.

Seeing Jiang Yang there early in the morning, she felt worried and asked, “Mom are you fine? Is there any problem that doctor Jiang Yang is here?”

Everyone looked at Song Meilin when Nixxie asked her this.

“There is nothing wrong with your mother’s health. I am here for something related to me,” Jiang Yang replied instead of Song Meilin.

---

\*\*For the readers, who wants to read the present situation between Jiang Yuyan and adult Lu Lijun. A glimpse...

Jiang Yuyan opened her eyes as she woke up but her vision was blurry as she had a high fever the previous night. Realizing someone was standing near the wardrobe in her room, she looked in the direction while rubbing her eyes to see clearly. Her head was still spinning.

She looked at the man who was standing facing his back towards her, wearing a winter coat bought by her for Lu Qiang in the past. A wide smile painted on her lips and getting out of the bed in a hurry, she back hugged the man saying, “Lu Qiang. Where were you?”

A man gulped to get a back hug from her and couldn't move. When she released her strong grip around him, the man turned to make the smile on her lips to disappear in the next moment and she exclaimed, “L-Lu Lijun?”

=====

Note

Get all the latest chapters of the novel on “w e b n o v e l . c o m”

To interact personally with the author “mynovel20” -

1) get to the comment section of the novel on “w e b n o v e l . c o m”

OR

2) Join the discord server with link given below-

<https://discord.gg/8QvQn3Y>

## 394 Poor Kid...

“He was five years old when all this started.”

Hearing it, Jiang Yuyan stopped drying his hair. She knew, Lu Qiang was tensed and worried about his brother. She was just trying to comfort him by doing all this instead of asking him why and what happened with Lu Lijun. Jiang Yuyan sat beside him on the edge of the bed.

Lu Qiang continued, “Since the start he was an incredibly sensitive and stubborn child but at the same time achingly sweet, thoughtful, and hilarious. I always thought he had a unique personality and he would be the most talented person in the family.”

“He had a problem being socialized with others so we thought to send him in the outside world so that he can mingle with others. When he started elementary schooling, there was a drastic change in his behavior and it was more in a bad way.”

Jiang Yuyan was listening to him attentively sitting beside him. “He suddenly became moody, angry, and explosive. His behavior was unpredictable and unbearable and whenever something went wrong, instead of talking he used to scream non-stop making a mess everywhere.”

“Our family doctor asked us to take him to a child psychologist and he already predicted Lu Lijun being a gifted child. His condition worsened as I was busy with business and my father was not well. It was the result of us being ignorant of him. I kept aside everything and decided to look after him as he only listened to me and not to anyone else in the family. Lu Feng also left home so there was just me to look after him.”

“I consulted the doctor Zhang who was the famous one at that time. He too said the same thing about Lu Lijun being a gifted child and advised me on how to take care of him and deal with the issues related to his temper. During that time, I took him

everywhere I went whether it was in the office or on business trips. He was like my shadow.”

“During that time, the company was facing a lot more problems so I couldn’t leave it too but I was unaware that enemies had their eyes on my weakness and that was Lu Lijun. Once Lu Lijun was a bit better, we enrolled him in a school and as advised by the doctor we had to skip a grade for him. He was in control and we thought there was nothing to be worried about but one day something happened that changed his life.”

“He was just five years old and he was kidnapped by one of our enemies. It shook the entire family and leaving everything aside I just wanted to get him back and for that, I was ready to accept anything asked by the kidnappers. It was the move to get me down from my position as president of Lu corporation and it was planned by a few people who even before planned a few more things against the family.”

“I was ready to give up my position but I knew those people won’t just stop with this and in future, they will come up with a few more problems so I too planned something but later I regretted it. Though I agreed to their demand, I asked San Zemin, my source of all the information in the business world, to get information about everything related to it.”

“San Zemin was successful to get the information in three days and I was able to get who was behind hiring kidnappers. I let it slide and decide to go to Lu Lijun first. When I got to know where Lu Lijun was, I went to get him as soon as possible but just to get a shock of my life.”

Lu Qiang was calm until he reached this part. His voice became heavy and he looked sad. Jiang Yuyan held his hand and caressed it to calm him down.

“Those kidnappers already got to know that even after agreeing to their request, I was planning and searching for Lu Lijun so they ran away leaving him alone in a dark and shabby godown alone with his hands and legs tied tightly with cable ties. His eyes were covered with a cloth strip and mouth was

sealed with tape. He was lying there unconscious and I almost thought that I lost him.”

Saying it and remembering those moments, tears rolled down from his eyes and he felt choked. Jiang Yuyan immediately got water for him. She could understand his situation better than anyone as she had been a victim before and she had witnessed her brother’s struggle for her. She could feel how Lu Qiang was feeling, his guilt of not being able to protect his younger brother.

“He was locked alone in a dark place for two days without any food or water and not even being able to see what was happening outside. He must have cried and wanted to ask for help but he couldn’t and finally gave up. After being rescued he was unconscious for a week and after he woke up, he was disturbed mentally to the great extent. He is afraid of the dark that’s why he was like that in the outhouse, last night”

“Hmm! I can understand it,” Jiang Yuyan said.

“My Father was well till then so I gave up on the president’s position and decide to do my duty as his elder brother. Lu Lijun never allowed anyone around him other than me and Lu Feng. Since he was a child, I and Lu Feng were closer to him and he felt protected with us.”

“This farmhouse was not like this before but my father converted it to give a look of Lu Mansion and created the garden the same as there. Lu Feng came back to Lu mansion when he got this news and stayed here with me and Lu Lijun here. This farmhouse, here we three spent one year together away from everyone as advised by the doctor while other family members kept coming to visit us in-between”

=====

Note- So many readers ask me for mass release but it’s not easy for me to write so much given my current busy schedule... The mass release would be there on the day when we will be in TOP 10... I don’t know when that day will come but I will give straight away mass release of 10 chapters by keeping all my work aside.. (voting will just start today and it will take 2-3 days to show original ranking so don’t comment

as saying, novel is in top 10 so give us mass release. the result will be there at the end of the week)

## 395 Sacrificing a dream...

Note- read authors thought first..

Lu Qiang looked at Jiang Yuyan and asked her to sit. Sitting in one of the chairs, Jiang Yuyan passed the shopping bag in her hands to Lu Qiang. Lu Qiang had a smile on his face as his woman bought something for him.

“Brother wear it and show us,” Lu Lijun said.

Lu Qiang got up from the couch and wore the black winter coat while standing in front of the mirror. He turned to look at both of them. Jiang Yuyan looked at him with her eyes wide open to see how handsome he was looking in that coat.

He always looked handsome but her reaction was like this because he was wearing something bought by her and she couldn't help but admire him.

“How is it, Lu Lijun?” Lu Qiang asked.

“It's the really nice elder brother, I want to wear it too,” Said Lu Lijun.

“Okay! Come here,” saying it, Lu Qiang was about to take it off just then Lu Lijun spoke, “Not now elder brother as its size won't fit me.”

“Then?” Lu Qiang asked.

“I will wear it when I would be taller like you.”

“Hmm! That's a good idea. Then I will keep it safe until you become like me.”

Jiang Yuyan was happy that both liked what she bought for them and said, “Lu Lijun will look more handsome than you in this coat.”

Lu Qiang agreed and said, “Not a doubt as he is the most handsome man in this family.”

“Both of you, are you trying to flatter me? No need because I already know I am handsome,” Lu Lijun said confidently

without blinking an eye and looked like he was not joking.

Jiang Yuyan and Lu Qiang both smiled to hear it and didn't say anything but both meant what they said- Lu Lijun was going to be the most handsome man in the family.

Lu Qiang took off the winter coat and stepped towards the wardrobe. The wardrobe had one section that was empty and it had a glass door. One could see what was inside.

There was only one jacket hanging that he took out and hung the winter coat in it. Turning around to look at Lu Lijun, he said, "This coat will be here always. Even if I will wear it, it will be here only. The day when you will feel like you can wear it, just go ahead and do it.

Lu Lijun nodded and said, "I will."

That night, Lu Qiang asked Jiang Yuyan to sleep in his room as they never slept in his room before. It was always Jiang Yuyan's room, they shared.

Looking at the huge king size bed, Jiang Yuyan said, "It will be the first time that I am going to sleep here."

"I found your room better as I can feel your presence in everything there and don't worry, in the next few months you will be sleeping in this bed, always," Lu Qiang replied that made her blush.

Lying in a bed, while Jiang Yuyan lying beside him with her head resting on his arm, Lu Qiang said, "Lu Lijun likes you now."

"I think so too." Jiang Yuyan agreed.

"More than that, he respects you and cares for you."

"Is it?"

"Hmm!"

"Well, I am glad to know it."

"He would have rejected that sweatshirt you bought if the person was someone else instead of you but he accepted it and he will like it too."



“Are you sure that he will wear it? Jiang Yuyan asked.

“Yes!” Lu Qiang replied and after some talking and teasing both fell asleep.

The Next Morning In Jiang residence.

Jiang Yang was ready to go out of the home early even though it was not a time to go to the hospital yet. He sat in his car and looked like he was thinking about something but there was a smile on his face.

Soon the car stopped in front of Xi residence. Jiang Yang got out of the car and entered inside. Song Meilin was waiting for him as Jiang Yang already informed her that he was coming to meet her.

“Welcome doctor Jiang Yang,” she said.

Nodding with a smile, Jiang Yang went with her to the sofa in the living room and sat there. Jiang Yang’s eyes looked around in the living room and noticing it, song Meilin said, “Nicky is in her room as she is getting ready.”

Jiang Yang gave a little nod. When Jiang Yang informed Song Meilin he asked her that all the family members should be there so song Meilin invited him for breakfast as it was the time when all are mostly available. Song Meilin didn’t consider other members as a family but Jiang Yang insisted her to have everyone there. Soon it was breakfast time and all came to the living room, Xi Cheng and his mother, Nixxie’s father and Nixxie herself too.

Seeing Jiang Yang there early in the morning, she felt worried and asked, “Mom are you fine? Is there any problem that doctor Jiang Yang is here?”

Everyone looked at Song Meilin when Nixxie asked her this.

“There is nothing wrong with your mother’s health. I am here for something related to me,” Jiang Yang replied instead of Song Meilin.

---

\*\*For the readers, who wants to read the present situation between Jiang Yuyan and adult Lu Lijun. A glimpse...

Jiang Yuyan opened her eyes as she woke up but her vision was blurry as she had a high fever the previous night. Realizing someone was standing near the wardrobe in her room, she looked in the direction while rubbing her eyes to see clearly. Her head was still spinning.

She looked at the man who was standing facing his back towards her, wearing a winter coat bought by her for Lu Qiang in the past. A wide smile painted on her lips and getting out of the bed in a hurry, she back hugged the man saying, “Lu Qiang. Where were you?”

A man gulped to get a back hug from her and couldn't move. When she released her strong grip around him, the man turned to make the smile on her lips to disappear in the next moment and she exclaimed, “L-Lu Lijun?”

=====

Note

Get all the latest chapters of the novel on “w e b n o v e l . c o m”

To interact personally with the author “mynovel20” -

1) get to the comment section of the novel on “w e b n o v e l . c o m”

OR

2) Join the discord server with link given below-

<https://discord.gg/8QvQn3Y>

## 396 Calling Him Wifey...

Note- read authors thought first..

Lu Qiang looked at Jiang Yuyan and asked her to sit. Sitting in one of the chairs, Jiang Yuyan passed the shopping bag in her hands to Lu Qiang. Lu Qiang had a smile on his face as his woman bought something for him.

“Brother wear it and show us,” Lu Lijun said.

Lu Qiang got up from the couch and wore the black winter coat while standing in front of the mirror. He turned to look at both of them. Jiang Yuyan looked at him with her eyes wide open to see how handsome he was looking in that coat.

He always looked handsome but her reaction was like this because he was wearing something bought by her and she couldn't help but admire him.

“How is it, Lu Lijun?” Lu Qiang asked.

“It's the really nice elder brother, I want to wear it too,” Said Lu Lijun.

“Okay! Come here,” saying it, Lu Qiang was about to take it off just then Lu Lijun spoke, “Not now elder brother as its size won't fit me.”

“Then?” Lu Qiang asked.

“I will wear it when I would be taller like you.”

“Hmm! That's a good idea. Then I will keep it safe until you become like me.”

Jiang Yuyan was happy that both liked what she bought for them and said, “Lu Lijun will look more handsome than you in this coat.”

Lu Qiang agreed and said, “Not a doubt as he is the most handsome man in this family.”

“Both of you, are you trying to flatter me? No need because I already know I am handsome,” Lu Lijun said confidently

without blinking an eye and looked like he was not joking.

Jiang Yuyan and Lu Qiang both smiled to hear it and didn't say anything but both meant what they said- Lu Lijun was going to be the most handsome man in the family.

Lu Qiang took off the winter coat and stepped towards the wardrobe. The wardrobe had one section that was empty and it had a glass door. One could see what was inside.

There was only one jacket hanging that he took out and hung the winter coat in it. Turning around to look at Lu Lijun, he said, "This coat will be here always. Even if I will wear it, it will be here only. The day when you will feel like you can wear it, just go ahead and do it.

Lu Lijun nodded and said, "I will."

That night, Lu Qiang asked Jiang Yuyan to sleep in his room as they never slept in his room before. It was always Jiang Yuyan's room, they shared.

Looking at the huge king size bed, Jiang Yuyan said, "It will be the first time that I am going to sleep here."

"I found your room better as I can feel your presence in everything there and don't worry, in the next few months you will be sleeping in this bed, always," Lu Qiang replied that made her blush.

Lying in a bed, while Jiang Yuyan lying beside him with her head resting on his arm, Lu Qiang said, "Lu Lijun likes you now."

"I think so too." Jiang Yuyan agreed.

"More than that, he respects you and cares for you."

"Is it?"

"Hmm!"

"Well, I am glad to know it."

"He would have rejected that sweatshirt you bought if the person was someone else instead of you but he accepted it and he will like it too."

“Are you sure that he will wear it? Jiang Yuyan asked.

“Yes!” Lu Qiang replied and after some talking and teasing both fell asleep.

The Next Morning In Jiang residence.

Jiang Yang was ready to go out of the home early even though it was not a time to go to the hospital yet. He sat in his car and looked like he was thinking about something but there was a smile on his face.

Soon the car stopped in front of Xi residence. Jiang Yang got out of the car and entered inside. Song Meilin was waiting for him as Jiang Yang already informed her that he was coming to meet her.

“Welcome doctor Jiang Yang,” she said.

Nodding with a smile, Jiang Yang went with her to the sofa in the living room and sat there. Jiang Yang’s eyes looked around in the living room and noticing it, song Meilin said, “Nicky is in her room as she is getting ready.”

Jiang Yang gave a little nod. When Jiang Yang informed Song Meilin he asked her that all the family members should be there so song Meilin invited him for breakfast as it was the time when all are mostly available. Song Meilin didn’t consider other members as a family but Jiang Yang insisted her to have everyone there. Soon it was breakfast time and all came to the living room, Xi Cheng and his mother, Nixxie’s father and Nixxie herself too.

Seeing Jiang Yang there early in the morning, she felt worried and asked, “Mom are you fine? Is there any problem that doctor Jiang Yang is here?”

Everyone looked at Song Meilin when Nixxie asked her this.

“There is nothing wrong with your mother’s health. I am here for something related to me,” Jiang Yang replied instead of Song Meilin.

---

\*\*For the readers, who wants to read the present situation between Jiang Yuyan and adult Lu Lijun. A glimpse...

Jiang Yuyan opened her eyes as she woke up but her vision was blurry as she had a high fever the previous night. Realizing someone was standing near the wardrobe in her room, she looked in the direction while rubbing her eyes to see clearly. Her head was still spinning.

She looked at the man who was standing facing his back towards her, wearing a winter coat bought by her for Lu Qiang in the past. A wide smile painted on her lips and getting out of the bed in a hurry, she back hugged the man saying, “Lu Qiang. Where were you?”

A man gulped to get a back hug from her and couldn't move. When she released her strong grip around him, the man turned to make the smile on her lips to disappear in the next moment and she exclaimed, “L-Lu Lijun?”

=====

Note

Get all the latest chapters of the novel on “w e b n o v e l . c o m”

To interact personally with the author “mynovel20” -

1) get to the comment section of the novel on “w e b n o v e l . c o m”

OR

2) Join the discord server with link given below-

<https://discord.gg/8QvQn3Y>

# 397 Changing The Last Names...

Note- read authors thought first..

Lu Qiang looked at Jiang Yuyan and asked her to sit. Sitting in one of the chairs, Jiang Yuyan passed the shopping bag in her hands to Lu Qiang. Lu Qiang had a smile on his face as his woman bought something for him.

“Brother wear it and show us,” Lu Lijun said.

Lu Qiang got up from the couch and wore the black winter coat while standing in front of the mirror. He turned to look at both of them. Jiang Yuyan looked at him with her eyes wide open to see how handsome he was looking in that coat.

He always looked handsome but her reaction was like this because he was wearing something bought by her and she couldn't help but admire him.

“How is it, Lu Lijun?” Lu Qiang asked.

“It's the really nice elder brother, I want to wear it too,” Said Lu Lijun.

“Okay! Come here,” saying it, Lu Qiang was about to take it off just then Lu Lijun spoke, “Not now elder brother as its size won't fit me.”

“Then?” Lu Qiang asked.

“I will wear it when I would be taller like you.”

“Hmm! That's a good idea. Then I will keep it safe until you become like me.”

Jiang Yuyan was happy that both liked what she bought for them and said, “Lu Lijun will look more handsome than you in this coat.”

Lu Qiang agreed and said, “Not a doubt as he is the most handsome man in this family.”

“Both of you, are you trying to flatter me? No need because I already know I am handsome,” Lu Lijun said confidently without blinking an eye and looked like he was not joking.

Jiang Yuyan and Lu Qiang both smiled to hear it and didn't say anything but both meant what they said- Lu Lijun was going to be the most handsome man in the family.

Lu Qiang took off the winter coat and stepped towards the wardrobe. The wardrobe had one section that was empty and it had a glass door. One could see what was inside.

There was only one jacket hanging that he took out and hung the winter coat in it. Turning around to look at Lu Lijun, he said, “This coat will be here always. Even if I will wear it, it will be here only. The day when you will feel like you can wear it, just go ahead and do it.

Lu Lijun nodded and said, “I will.”

That night, Lu Qiang asked Jiang Yuyan to sleep in his room as they never slept in his room before. It was always Jiang Yuyan's room, they shared.

Looking at the huge king size bed, Jiang Yuyan said, “It will be the first time that I am going to sleep here.”

“I found your room better as I can feel your presence in everything there and don't worry, in the next few months you will be sleeping in this bed, always,” Lu Qiang replied that made her blush.

Lying in a bed, while Jiang Yuyan lying beside him with her head resting on his arm, Lu Qiang said, “Lu Lijun likes you now.”

“I think so too.” Jiang Yuyan agreed.

“More than that, he respects you and cares for you.”

“Is it?”

“Hmm!”

“Well, I am glad to know it.”

“He would have rejected that sweatshirt you bought if the person was someone else instead of you but he accepted it and



he will like it too.”

“Are you sure that he will wear it? Jiang Yuyan asked.

“Yes!” Lu Qiang replied and after some talking and teasing both fell asleep.

The Next Morning In Jiang residence.

Jiang Yang was ready to go out of the home early even though it was not a time to go to the hospital yet. He sat in his car and looked like he was thinking about something but there was a smile on his face.

Soon the car stopped in front of Xi residence. Jiang Yang got out of the car and entered inside. Song Meilin was waiting for him as Jiang Yang already informed her that he was coming to meet her.

“Welcome doctor Jiang Yang,” she said.

Nodding with a smile, Jiang Yang went with her to the sofa in the living room and sat there. Jiang Yang’s eyes looked around in the living room and noticing it, song Meilin said, “Nicky is in her room as she is getting ready.”

Jiang Yang gave a little nod. When Jiang Yang informed Song Meilin he asked her that all the family members should be there so song Meilin invited him for breakfast as it was the time when all are mostly available. Song Meilin didn’t consider other members as a family but Jiang Yang insisted her to have everyone there. Soon it was breakfast time and all came to the living room, Xi Cheng and his mother, Nixxxie’s father and Nixxxie herself too.

Seeing Jiang Yang there early in the morning, she felt worried and asked, “Mom are you fine? Is there any problem that doctor Jiang Yang is here?”

Everyone looked at Song Meilin when Nixxxie asked her this.

“There is nothing wrong with your mother’s health. I am here for something related to me,” Jiang Yang replied instead of Song Meilin.

---

\*\*For the readers, who wants to read the present situation between Jiang Yuyan and adult Lu Lijun. A glimpse...

Jiang Yuyan opened her eyes as she woke up but her vision was blurry as she had a high fever the previous night. Realizing someone was standing near the wardrobe in her room, she looked in the direction while rubbing her eyes to see clearly. Her head was still spinning.

She looked at the man who was standing facing his back towards her, wearing a winter coat bought by her for Lu Qiang in the past. A wide smile painted on her lips and getting out of the bed in a hurry, she back hugged the man saying, "Lu Qiang. Where were you?"

A man gulped to get a back hug from her and couldn't move. When she released her strong grip around him, the man turned to make the smile on her lips to disappear in the next moment and she exclaimed, "L-Lu Lijun?"

=====

Note

Get all the latest chapters of the novel on "w e b n o v e l . c o m"

To interact personally with the author "mynovel20" -

1) get to the comment section of the novel on "w e b n o v e l . c o m"

OR

2) Join the discord server with link given below-

<https://discord.gg/8QvQn3Y>

## 398 Thank You, Yuyan...

Note- read authors thought first..

Lu Qiang looked at Jiang Yuyan and asked her to sit. Sitting in one of the chairs, Jiang Yuyan passed the shopping bag in her hands to Lu Qiang. Lu Qiang had a smile on his face as his woman bought something for him.

“Brother wear it and show us,” Lu Lijun said.

Lu Qiang got up from the couch and wore the black winter coat while standing in front of the mirror. He turned to look at both of them. Jiang Yuyan looked at him with her eyes wide open to see how handsome he was looking in that coat.

He always looked handsome but her reaction was like this because he was wearing something bought by her and she couldn't help but admire him.

“How is it, Lu Lijun?” Lu Qiang asked.

“It's the really nice elder brother, I want to wear it too,” Said Lu Lijun.

“Okay! Come here,” saying it, Lu Qiang was about to take it off just then Lu Lijun spoke, “Not now elder brother as its size won't fit me.”

“Then?” Lu Qiang asked.

“I will wear it when I would be taller like you.”

“Hmm! That's a good idea. Then I will keep it safe until you become like me.”

Jiang Yuyan was happy that both liked what she bought for them and said, “Lu Lijun will look more handsome than you in this coat.”

Lu Qiang agreed and said, “Not a doubt as he is the most handsome man in this family.”

“Both of you, are you trying to flatter me? No need because I already know I am handsome,” Lu Lijun said confidently

without blinking an eye and looked like he was not joking.

Jiang Yuyan and Lu Qiang both smiled to hear it and didn't say anything but both meant what they said- Lu Lijun was going to be the most handsome man in the family.

Lu Qiang took off the winter coat and stepped towards the wardrobe. The wardrobe had one section that was empty and it had a glass door. One could see what was inside.

There was only one jacket hanging that he took out and hung the winter coat in it. Turning around to look at Lu Lijun, he said, "This coat will be here always. Even if I will wear it, it will be here only. The day when you will feel like you can wear it, just go ahead and do it.

Lu Lijun nodded and said, "I will."

That night, Lu Qiang asked Jiang Yuyan to sleep in his room as they never slept in his room before. It was always Jiang Yuyan's room, they shared.

Looking at the huge king size bed, Jiang Yuyan said, "It will be the first time that I am going to sleep here."

"I found your room better as I can feel your presence in everything there and don't worry, in the next few months you will be sleeping in this bed, always," Lu Qiang replied that made her blush.

Lying in a bed, while Jiang Yuyan lying beside him with her head resting on his arm, Lu Qiang said, "Lu Lijun likes you now."

"I think so too." Jiang Yuyan agreed.

"More than that, he respects you and cares for you."

"Is it?"

"Hmm!"

"Well, I am glad to know it."

"He would have rejected that sweatshirt you bought if the person was someone else instead of you but he accepted it and he will like it too."

“Are you sure that he will wear it? Jiang Yuyan asked.

“Yes!” Lu Qiang replied and after some talking and teasing both fell asleep.

The Next Morning In Jiang residence.

Jiang Yang was ready to go out of the home early even though it was not a time to go to the hospital yet. He sat in his car and looked like he was thinking about something but there was a smile on his face.

Soon the car stopped in front of Xi residence. Jiang Yang got out of the car and entered inside. Song Meilin was waiting for him as Jiang Yang already informed her that he was coming to meet her.

“Welcome doctor Jiang Yang,” she said.

Nodding with a smile, Jiang Yang went with her to the sofa in the living room and sat there. Jiang Yang’s eyes looked around in the living room and noticing it, song Meilin said, “Nicky is in her room as she is getting ready.”

Jiang Yang gave a little nod. When Jiang Yang informed Song Meilin he asked her that all the family members should be there so song Meilin invited him for breakfast as it was the time when all are mostly available. Song Meilin didn’t consider other members as a family but Jiang Yang insisted her to have everyone there. Soon it was breakfast time and all came to the living room, Xi Cheng and his mother, Nixxie’s father and Nixxie herself too.

Seeing Jiang Yang there early in the morning, she felt worried and asked, “Mom are you fine? Is there any problem that doctor Jiang Yang is here?”

Everyone looked at Song Meilin when Nixxie asked her this.

“There is nothing wrong with your mother’s health. I am here for something related to me,” Jiang Yang replied instead of Song Meilin.

---

\*\*For the readers, who wants to read the present situation between Jiang Yuyan and adult Lu Lijun. A glimpse...

Jiang Yuyan opened her eyes as she woke up but her vision was blurry as she had a high fever the previous night. Realizing someone was standing near the wardrobe in her room, she looked in the direction while rubbing her eyes to see clearly. Her head was still spinning.

She looked at the man who was standing facing his back towards her, wearing a winter coat bought by her for Lu Qiang in the past. A wide smile painted on her lips and getting out of the bed in a hurry, she back hugged the man saying, “Lu Qiang. Where were you?”

A man gulped to get a back hug from her and couldn't move. When she released her strong grip around him, the man turned to make the smile on her lips to disappear in the next moment and she exclaimed, “L-Lu Lijun?”

=====

Note

Get all the latest chapters of the novel on “w e b n o v e l . c o m”

To interact personally with the author “mynovel20” -

1) get to the comment section of the novel on “w e b n o v e l . c o m”

OR

2) Join the discord server with link given below-

<https://discord.gg/8QvQn3Y>

# 399 Your Brother Made Him Sick...

Note- read authors thought first..

Lu Qiang looked at Jiang Yuyan and asked her to sit. Sitting in one of the chairs, Jiang Yuyan passed the shopping bag in her hands to Lu Qiang. Lu Qiang had a smile on his face as his woman bought something for him.

“Brother wear it and show us,” Lu Lijun said.

Lu Qiang got up from the couch and wore the black winter coat while standing in front of the mirror. He turned to look at both of them. Jiang Yuyan looked at him with her eyes wide open to see how handsome he was looking in that coat.

He always looked handsome but her reaction was like this because he was wearing something bought by her and she couldn't help but admire him.

“How is it, Lu Lijun?” Lu Qiang asked.

“It's the really nice elder brother, I want to wear it too,” Said Lu Lijun.

“Okay! Come here,” saying it, Lu Qiang was about to take it off just then Lu Lijun spoke, “Not now elder brother as its size won't fit me.”

“Then?” Lu Qiang asked.

“I will wear it when I would be taller like you.”

“Hmm! That's a good idea. Then I will keep it safe until you become like me.”

Jiang Yuyan was happy that both liked what she bought for them and said, “Lu Lijun will look more handsome than you in this coat.”

Lu Qiang agreed and said, “Not a doubt as he is the most handsome man in this family.”

“Both of you, are you trying to flatter me? No need because I already know I am handsome,” Lu Lijun said confidently without blinking an eye and looked like he was not joking.

Jiang Yuyan and Lu Qiang both smiled to hear it and didn't say anything but both meant what they said- Lu Lijun was going to be the most handsome man in the family.

Lu Qiang took off the winter coat and stepped towards the wardrobe. The wardrobe had one section that was empty and it had a glass door. One could see what was inside.

There was only one jacket hanging that he took out and hung the winter coat in it. Turning around to look at Lu Lijun, he said, “This coat will be here always. Even if I will wear it, it will be here only. The day when you will feel like you can wear it, just go ahead and do it.

Lu Lijun nodded and said, “I will.”

That night, Lu Qiang asked Jiang Yuyan to sleep in his room as they never slept in his room before. It was always Jiang Yuyan's room, they shared.

Looking at the huge king size bed, Jiang Yuyan said, “It will be the first time that I am going to sleep here.”

“I found your room better as I can feel your presence in everything there and don't worry, in the next few months you will be sleeping in this bed, always,” Lu Qiang replied that made her blush.

Lying in a bed, while Jiang Yuyan lying beside him with her head resting on his arm, Lu Qiang said, “Lu Lijun likes you now.”

“I think so too.” Jiang Yuyan agreed.

“More than that, he respects you and cares for you.”

“Is it?”

“Hmm!”

“Well, I am glad to know it.”

“He would have rejected that sweatshirt you bought if the person was someone else instead of you but he accepted it and



he will like it too.”

“Are you sure that he will wear it? Jiang Yuyan asked.

“Yes!” Lu Qiang replied and after some talking and teasing both fell asleep.

The Next Morning In Jiang residence.

Jiang Yang was ready to go out of the home early even though it was not a time to go to the hospital yet. He sat in his car and looked like he was thinking about something but there was a smile on his face.

Soon the car stopped in front of Xi residence. Jiang Yang got out of the car and entered inside. Song Meilin was waiting for him as Jiang Yang already informed her that he was coming to meet her.

“Welcome doctor Jiang Yang,” she said.

Nodding with a smile, Jiang Yang went with her to the sofa in the living room and sat there. Jiang Yang’s eyes looked around in the living room and noticing it, song Meilin said, “Nicky is in her room as she is getting ready.”

Jiang Yang gave a little nod. When Jiang Yang informed Song Meilin he asked her that all the family members should be there so song Meilin invited him for breakfast as it was the time when all are mostly available. Song Meilin didn’t consider other members as a family but Jiang Yang insisted her to have everyone there. Soon it was breakfast time and all came to the living room, Xi Cheng and his mother, Nixxxie’s father and Nixxxie herself too.

Seeing Jiang Yang there early in the morning, she felt worried and asked, “Mom are you fine? Is there any problem that doctor Jiang Yang is here?”

Everyone looked at Song Meilin when Nixxxie asked her this.

“There is nothing wrong with your mother’s health. I am here for something related to me,” Jiang Yang replied instead of Song Meilin.

---

\*\*For the readers, who wants to read the present situation between Jiang Yuyan and adult Lu Lijun. A glimpse...

Jiang Yuyan opened her eyes as she woke up but her vision was blurry as she had a high fever the previous night. Realizing someone was standing near the wardrobe in her room, she looked in the direction while rubbing her eyes to see clearly. Her head was still spinning.

She looked at the man who was standing facing his back towards her, wearing a winter coat bought by her for Lu Qiang in the past. A wide smile painted on her lips and getting out of the bed in a hurry, she back hugged the man saying, "Lu Qiang. Where were you?"

A man gulped to get a back hug from her and couldn't move. When she released her strong grip around him, the man turned to make the smile on her lips to disappear in the next moment and she exclaimed, "L-Lu Lijun?"

=====

Note

Get all the latest chapters of the novel on "w e b n o v e l . c o m"

To interact personally with the author "mynovel20" -

1) get to the comment section of the novel on "w e b n o v e l . c o m"

OR

2) Join the discord server with link given below-

<https://discord.gg/8QvQn3Y>

## 400 You Tricked Me?

“He is fine but your brother made him sick,” Lu Qiang answered

Jiang Yang laughed and said, “Nothing can feel better than annoying my dear friend.”

“I can feel Lu Feng as I have gone through it. Before I was brother Yang’s target and now it’s Lu Feng,” Jiang Yuyan said.

Hearing his sister, Jiang Yang said, “What are you talking about, little birdie? What target? It’s my love for you guys.”

“Why don’t you show some of your love to Lu Qiang then?” Jiang Yuyan asked.

Giving out a deep sigh, Jiang Yang replied, “I want to but he doesn’t need it as he is already overflowing with a love for you and my love is only for a needy person.”

“Then keep it for Nixxie only. She needs it desperately,” Lu Qiang said.

“Don’t worry I have an unlimited quota of love with me,” Jiang Yang said and they stepped towards the door Lu Mansion.

“I don’t think you are going to get an entry in his room,” Lu Qiang said.

“Really? Then it’s your responsibility to make me enter his room or I will sleep with both of you,” Jiang Yang said.

“It won’t take me much time to throw you out of the balcony,” Lu Qiang replied.

“What a cruel friend I have in my life?” Jiang Yang mumbled to himself as they were going upstairs.

Lu Qiang heard him and said, “It’s nothing compared to how much you annoy Lu Feng.”

“Never mind, I will go to my darling as I am so tired. You guys can go your way.” Saying, Jiang Yang went towards Lu

Feng's room. As he knocked on the door, there was no reply from inside. He knocked again and tried to open the door but it was locked.

"Lu Feng opened the door or I will break it," Jiang Yang said but still there was no reply. Jiang Yang continued talking and knocking the door but still, there was no reply as if no one was inside.

Jiang Yang understood, Lu Feng was intentionally doing it and whatever he will do, Lu Feng won't let him come inside. Finally, Jiang Yang said, "Okay! If you don't want to see me, I will go from here. I am going back to Jiang residence." Saying it, Jiang Yang stepped away from Lu Feng's room carrying his bag.

Lu Feng was sitting inside on a couch listening to everything that Jiang Yang was doing and saying but he had already decided not to let Jiang Yang come inside the room and spend a peaceful night alone. When he heard what Jiang Yang said about going back to Jiang residence, he looked at the table clock in his room. It was past midnight and from what he remembered when he was driving that Jiang Yang was tired and felt sleepy as he almost slept in a car for a while.

Feeling worried about him, Lu Feng strode towards the door and opened it but no was there. He checked here and there but still couldn't find Jiang Yang. In a hurry, Lu Feng went downstairs to check and bring him back but he couldn't see anyone. Finally, he decided to call Jiang Yang. As he dialed a number, Jiang Yang received it and asked, "Already missing me, darling?"

Ignoring what he said, Lu Feng asked, "Where are you?"

"Why do you want to know?" Jiang Yang asked.

"It's past midnight and you were already sleepy so driving long distance can be dangerous. Come back here and you can go back tomorrow morning."

"Who said I am driving and going back to my home?" Jiang Yang asked.

"You said it," Lu Feng answered.

“Heh! Here I am lying in a comfortable bed of my darling, why would I miss it and trouble myself from driving so late in the night?”

Hearing it, Lu Feng was stunned and asked, “W-what? Where are you?”

“In my darling’s room and in his soft bed,” Jiang Yang replied.

Gritting his teeth, Lu Feng hung up the call and went upstairs in a hurry. When he reached inside the room, he saw Jiang Yang was lying in his bed looking at him with a mischievous smile on his face.

“Were you searching for me, darling?” Jiang Yang asked.

“You tricked me?” asking Lu Feng climbed the bed and went on Jiang Yang ready to punch him in a face.

“Wait-Wait. Don’t hurt my face. I am sorry.” Jiang Yang pleaded thought it was fake.

Lu Feng was about to retreat his hand just then Jiang Yang spoke seeing him giving up, “I know, my darling won’t hurt me.”

“Really?” Saying Lu Feng punched him in a face for real.

“Ahhh! It hurts you cruel thing.” Jiang Yang whined.

“Cruel thing huh? Not a darling anymore?” Lu Feng asked, having a devilish smile on his face

“Kiss me where you hurt me and I will call you a darling.” Jiang Yang said still not getting his head straight.

“Kiss? My ass.” Lu Feng let go of him and said, “Go and sleep on the couch and don’t dare to disturb me.”

“Couch?” Jiang Yang exclaimed.

“You should be grateful that I am letting you sleep here.” Lu Feng threw one pillow at him and said as ordering him, “Get out of my bed.”

Jiang Yang obeyed him and went to the couch quietly. Both fell asleep in a while. After some time, Jiang Yang felt uncomfortable in a couch as it was not long enough to let him

stretch his legs comfortably. He looked at the bed where Lu Feng was sleeping soundly.

“You are sleeping comfortably in a bed like a horse and here I am suffering.” Saying Jiang Yang went to the bed without making a sound and slept beside Lu Feng not making slow movements to not let him wake up.

The next morning, Lu Feng opened his eyes just to see, Jiang Yang was sleeping beside him while facing him and his one hand on Lu Feng’s chest.